



**DELHI UNIVERSITY**  
**LIBRARY**

## DELHI UNIVERSITY LIBRARY.

Cl. No. 0:3M65-2

G 7-29

Date of release for loan

Ac. No. 114754

This book should be returned on or before the date last stamped below. An overdue charge of one anna will be charged for each day the book is kept overtime.

[illegible]



THE SUSSEX EDITION OF THE COMPLETE  
WORKS IN PROSE AND VERSE OF

RUDYARD KIPLING

PUBLISHED BY MACMILLAN AND COMPANY  
SAINT MARTIN'S STREET, LONDON



THIS EDITION CONSISTS  
OF FIVE HUNDRED AND  
TWENTY-FIVE COPIES ONLY

VOLUME XXIX  
UNCOLLECTED PROSE  
I



UNCOLLECTED PROSE

VOLUME I

**COPYRIGHT  
SUSSEX EDITION  
1938**

**PRINTED IN GREAT BRITAIN**

# Contents

## ABAST THE FUNNEL—

ERASTAS US OF THE <i>W</i> HANGHOA	p. 3
HER LITTLE RESPONSIBILITY	p. 13
ONE LADY AT LARGE	p. 21
A SMOKER OF MANILA	p. 27
'THE RED LAMP'	p. 35
THE SHADOW OF HIS HAND	p. 43
A LITTLE MORE BEEF	p. 51
THE HISTORY OF A FALL	p. 59
GRIFFITHS THE SAFE MAN	p. 67
IT!	p. 77
A FALLEN IDOL	p. 85
NEW BROOMS	p. 91
TIGLATH PILESER	p. 99
THE LIKES O' US	p. 107
HIS BROTHER'S KEEPER	p. 117
'SLEIPNER,' LATE 'THURINDA'	p. 133
A SUPPLEMENTARY CHAPTER	p. 149
CHAUTAUQUAED	p. 165

## UNCOLLECTED PROSE

### ABAF THE FUNNEL (*Contd.*)

THE BOW FLUME CABLE-CAR p. 183

IN PARTIBUS p. 191

LETTERS ON LEAVE p. 197

THE ADORATION OF THE MAGE p. 221

A DEATH IN THE CAMP p. 227

A REALLY GOOD TIME p. 233

ON EXHIBITION p. 241

THE THREE YOUNG MEN p. 249

MY GREAT AND ONLY p. 257

'THE BETRAYAL OF CONFIDENCES' p. 269

THE NEW DISPENSATION p. 277

THE LAST OF THE STORIES p. 291

### OTHER STORIES—

THE BATTLE OF RUPERT SQUARE p. 315

FOR ONE NIGHT ONLY p. 323

THE LAMENTABLE COMEDY OF WILLOW  
WOOD p. 341

ON DRY-COW FISHING AS A FINE ART p. 365

THE LAST RELIEF p. 375

# ABAFT THE FUNNEL

1909

‘Men in pajamas sitting abaft the funnel  
and swapping lies of the purple seas’



The contents of *Abast the Funnel* originally appeared as contributions to the *Civil and Military Gazette*, Lahore, and the *Pioneer* and the *Week's News*, Allahabad.

# ERASTASIUS OF THE *WHANGHOA*



## ERASTASIUS OF THE *WHANGHOA*

**T**HE OLD CAT'S TUMBLED down the ventilator, sir, and he's swearing away under the furnace-door in the stoke-hole,' said the second officer to the Captain of the *Whanghoa*.

'Now what in thunder was Erastasius doing at the mouth of the ventilator? It's four feet from the ground and painted red at that. Any of the children been amusing themselves with him, d'you think? I wouldn't have Erastasius disturbed in his insides for all the gold in the Treasury,' said the Captain. 'Tell someone to bring him up, and handle him delicately. He ain't a quiet beast.'

In three minutes a bucket appeared on deck. It was covered with a wooden lid. 'Think he have makee die this time,' said the Chinese sailor who carried the coffin, with a grin. 'Catchee him topside coals—no open eye—no spit—no sclatchee my. Have got bucket, allee same, and makee tight. See!'

He dived his bare arm under the lid, but withdrew it with a yell, dropping the bucket at the same time. 'Hya! Can do. Maskee dlop down—maskee spillum coal. Have catchee my light there.'

Blood was trickling from his elbow. He moved aft, while the bucket, mysteriously worked by hidden force, trundled to and fro across the decks, swearing aloud.

Emerged finally Erastasius, tom-cat and grandfather-in-chief of the *Whanghoa*—a gaunt brindled beast, lacking one ear, with every hair on his body armed

and erect. He was patched with coal-dust, very stiff and sore all over, and very anxious to take the world into his confidence as to his wrongs. For this reason he did not run when he was clear of the bucket, but sitting on his hunkers regarded the Captain, as who would say: 'You hold a master's certificate and call yourself a seaman, and yet you allow this sort of thing on your boat.'

'Guess I must apologise, old man,' said the Captain gravely. 'Those ventilators are a little too broad in the beam for a passenger of your build. What made you walk down it? Not a rat, eh? You're too well fed to trouble for rats. Drink, was it?'

Erastiasius turned his back on the Captain. He was a tailless Japanese cat, and the abruptness of his termination gave him a specially brusque appearance.

'Shouldn't wonder if the old man hadn't been stealing something and was getting away from the galley. He's the biggest reprobate that I ever shipped—and that's saying something. No, he isn't my property exactly. I've got a notion that he owns the ship. Gathered that from the way he goes round after six bells to see the lights out. The chief engineer says he built the engines. Anyway, the old man sits in the engine-room and sort of keeps an eye on the boilers. He was on the ship before I joined her—that's seven years ago, when we were running up and down and around and about the China Seas.'

Erastiasius, his back to the company, was busied in cleaning his disarranged fur. He licked and swore alternately. The ventilator incident had hurt his feelings sorely.

'He knows we are talking about him,' continued the Captain. 'He's a responsible kind o' critter. That's natural when you come to think that he has saved a quarter of a million of dollars. At present his wants are few—guess he would like a netting over those ventilators first thing—but some day he'll begin to live up to his capital.'

'Saved a quarter of a million dollars! What securities did he invest 'em in?' said a man from Foochow.

'Here, in this bottom. He saved the *Whangho* with a full cargo of tea, silk, and opium, and thirteen thousand dollars in bar silver. Yes; that's about the extent of the old man's savings. I commanded. The old man was the rescuer, and I was more grateful to him 'cause it was my darned folly that nearly brought us into the trouble. I was new to these waters, new to the Chinaman and his fascinating little ways, being a New England man by raising. Erastasmus was raised by the Devil. That's who his sire was. Never ran across his dam. Ran across a forsaken sea, though, in the *Whanghoa*, a little to the north-east of this, with eight hundred steerage passengers, all Chinamen, for various and undenominated ports. Had the pleasure of sending eighteen of 'em into the water. Yes, that's so, isn't it, old man?'

Erastasmus finished licking himself and mewed affirmatively.

'Yes, we carried four white officers—a Westerner, two Vermont men, and myself. There were ten Americans, a couple of Danes and a half-caste knocking round the ship, and the crew were Chinese, but most of 'em good Chinese. Only good Chinese I ever

met. We had our steerage passengers 'tween-decks. Most of 'em lay around and played dominoes or smoked opium. We had bad weather at the start, and the steerage were powerful sick. I judged they would have no insides to them when the weather lifted, so I didn't put any guards on them. Wanted all my men to work the ship. Engines rotten as Congress, and under sail half the time. Next time I carry Chinese steerage trash I'll hire a Gatling and mount it on the 'tween-decks hatch.

'We were fooling about between islands—about a hundred and fifty thousand islands all wrapped up in fog. When the fog laid the wind, the engines broke down. One of the passengers—we carried no ladies that journey—came to me one evening. "I calculate there's a conspiracy 'tween-decks," he said. "Those pigtails are talking together. No good ever came of pigtails talking. I'm from 'Frisco. I authoritate on these matters." "Not on this ship," I said: "I've no use for duplicate authority." "You'll be homesick after nine this time to-morrow," he said and quit. I guess he told the other passengers his notions.

'Erastiasius shared my cabin in general. I didn't care to dispute with a cat that went heeled the way he did. That particular night when I came down he was not inclined for repose. When I shut the door he scrabbled till I let him out. When he was out he scrabbled to come back. When he was back he jumped all round the shanty yowling. I stroked him, and the sparks irrigated his back as if 'twas the smoke-stack of a river steamer. "I'll get you a wife, old man," I said, "next voyage. It is not good for you to be alone with me."

"*Whooper, yoopee-yaw-aw-aw*," said Erastsius. "Let me get out of this." I looked him square between the eyes to fix the place where I'd come down with a boot-heel (he was getting monotonous), and as I looked I saw the animal was just possessed with deadly fear—human fear—crawling, shaking fear. It crept out of the green of his eyes and crept over me in billowing waves—each wave colder than the last. "Unburden your mind, Erastsius," I said. "What's going to happen?" "*Wheep-pee-yeepee-ya-ya-ya-whoop!*" said Erastsius, backing to the door and scratching.

I quit my cabin sweating big drops, and somehow my hand shut on my six-shooter. The grip of the handle soothes a man when he is afraid. I heard the whole ship 'tween-decks rustling under me like all the woods of Maine when the wind's up. The lamp over the 'tween-decks was out. The steerage watchman was lying on the ground, and the whole hive of Celestials were on the tramp—soft-footed hounds. A lantern came down the alley-way. Behind it was the passenger that had spoken to me, and all the rest of the crowd, except the half-caste.

"Are you homesick any now?" said my passenger. The 'tween-decks woke up with a yell at the light, and some one fired up the hatchway. Then we began our share of the fun—the ten passengers and I. Eleven six-shooters. That cleared the first rush of the pigtails, but we continued firing on principle, working our way down the steps. No one came down from the spar-deck to assist, though I heard considerable of a trampling. The pigtails below were growling like cats. I heard the look-out man shout, "Junk on the port



bow," and the bell ring in the engine-room for full speed ahead. Then we struck something, and there was a yell inside and outside the ship that would have lifted your hair out. When the outside yell stopped, our pig-tails were on their faces. "Run down a junk," said my passenger—"their junk." He loosed three shots into the steerage on the strength of it. I went up on deck when things were quiet below. Some one had run our Dahlgren signal-gun forward and pointed it to the break of the foc'sle. There was the balance of a war-junk—three spars and a head or two on the water, and the first mate keeping his watch in regular style.

"What is your share?" he said. "We've smashed up a junk that tried to foul us. Seems to have affected the feelings of your friends below. Guess they wanted to make connection." "It is made," said I, "on the Glassy Sea. Where's the watch?" "In the foc'sle. The half-caste is sitting on the signal-gun smoking his cigar. The watch are speculatin' whether he'll stick the business-end of it in the touch-hole or continue smoking. I gather that gun is not empty." "Send 'em down below to wash decks," I said. "Tell the quartermaster to go through their boxes while they are away. They may have implements."

"The watch went below to clean things up. There were eighteen stiff'uns and fourteen with holes through their systems. Some died, some survived. I did not keep particular count. The balance I roped up, and it employed most of our spare rigging. When we touched port there was a picnic among the hangmen. Seems that Erastias had been yowling down the cabins all night before he came to me, and kept the passengers

alive. The man that spoke to me said the old man's eyes were awful to look at. He was dying to tell his fear, but couldn't. When the passengers came forward with the light, the half-caste quit for opsie and got the quartermaster to load the signal-gun with handspikes and bring it forward in case the foc'sle wished to assist in the row. That was the best half-caste I ever met. But the foc'sle didn't assist. They were sick. So were the men below—horror-sick. That was the way the old man saved the *Whanghoa*.'



## HER LITTLE RESPONSIBILITY



## HER LITTLE RESPONSIBILITY

‘And no man may answer for the soul of his  
brother’

IT WAS TWO IN THE MORNING, and Epstin’s Dive was almost empty, when a Thing staggered down the steps that led to that horrible place and fawned on me disgustingly for the price of a drink. ‘I’m dying of thirst,’ he said, but his tone was not that of a street loafer. There is a freemasonry, the freemasonry of the public schools, stronger than any that the Craft knows. The Thing drank whisky raw, which in itself is not calculated to slake thirst, and I waited at its side because I knew, by virtue of the one sentence above recorded, that it once belonged to my caste. Indeed, so small is the world when one begins to travel round it, that, for aught I knew, I might even have met the Thing in that menagerie of carefully trained wild beasts, Decent Society. And the Thing drank more whisky ere the flood-gates of its speech were loosed and spoke of the wonderful story of its fall.

Never man, he said, had suffered more than he, or for slighter sin. Whereat I winked beerily into the bottom of my empty glass, having heard that tale before. I think the Thing had been long divided from all social and moral restraint—even longer from the wholesome influence of soap and water.

‘What I feel most down here,’ said It, and by ‘down here’ I presume he meant the Inferno of his own wretchedness, ‘is the difficulty about getting a bath.

A man can always catch a free lunch at any of the bars in the city, if he has money enough to buy a drink with, and you can sleep out for six or eight months of the year without harm, but San Francisco doesn't run to free baths. It's not an amusing life any way you look at it. I'm more or less used to things, but it hurts me even now to meet a decent man who knows something of life in the old country. I was raised at Harrow—Harrow, if you please—and I'm not five-and-twenty yet, and I haven't got a penny, and I haven't got a friend, and there is nothing in creation that I can command except a drink, and I have to beg for that. Have you ever begged for a drink? It hurts at first, but you get used to it. My father's a parson. I don't think he knows I beg drink. He lives near Salisbury. Do you know Salisbury at all? And then there's my mother, too. But I have not heard from either of them for a couple of years. They think I'm in a real-estate office in Washington Territory, coining money hand over fist. If ever you run across them—I suppose you will some day—there's the address. Tell them that you've seen me, and that I am well and fit. Understand?—well and fit. I guess I'll be dead by the time you see 'em. That's hard. Men oughtn't to die at five-and-twenty—of drink. Say, were you ever mashed on a girl? Not one of these you see, girls out here, but an English one—the sort of girl one meets at the Vicarage tennis-party, don't you know? A girl of our own set. I don't mean mashed exactly, but dead, clean gone, head over ears and worse than that. I was once, and I fancy I took the thing pretty much as I take liquor now. I didn't know when

to stop. It didn't seem to me that there was any reason for stopping in affairs of that kind. I'm quite sure there's no reason for stopping half-way with liquor. Go the whole hog and die. It's all right, though—I'm not going to get drunk here. Five in the morning will suit me just as well, and I haven't the chance of talking to one of you fellows often. So you cut about in fine clothes, do you, and take your drinks at the best bars and put up at the Palace? All Englishmen do. Well, here's luck; you may be what I am one of these days. You'll find companions quite as well raised as yourself.

'But about this girl. Don't do what I did. I fell in love with her. She lived near us in Salisbury; that was when I had a clean shirt every day and hired horses to ride. One of the guineas I spent on that amusement would keep me for a week here. But about this girl. I don't think some men ought to be allowed to fall in love any more than they ought to be allowed to taste whisky. She said she cared for me. Used to say that about a thousand times a day, with a kiss in between. I think about those things now, and they make me nearly as drunk as the whisky does. Do you know anything about that love-making business? I stole a copy of *Cleopatra* off a book-stall in Kearney Street, and that priest-chap says a very true thing about it. You can't stop when it's once started, and when it's all over you can't give it up at the word of command. I forget the precise language. That girl cared for me. I'd give something if she could see me now. She doesn't like men without collars and odd boots and somebody else's hat; but anyhow she made me what I am, and



some day she'll know it. I came out here two years ago to a real-estate office; my father bought me some sort of a place in the firm. We were all Englishmen, but we were about a match for an average Yankee; but I forgot to tell you I was engaged to the girl before I came out. Never you make a woman swear oaths of eternal constancy. She'll break every one of them as soon as her mind changes, and call you unjust for making her swear them. I worked enough for five men in my first year. I got a little house and lot in Tacoma fit for any woman. I never drank, I hardly ever smoked, I sold real estate all day, and wrote letters at night. She wrote letters, too, about as full of affection as they make 'em. You can tell nothing from a woman's letter, though. If they want to hide anything, they just double the "dears" and "darlings," and then giggle when the man fancies himself deceived.

'I don't suppose I was worse off than hundreds of others, but it seems to me that she might have had the grace to let me down easily. She went and got married. I don't suppose she knew exactly what she was doing, because I got the letters just the same six weeks after she was married! It was an odd copy of an English paper that showed me what had happened. It came in on the same day as one of her letters, telling me she would be true to the gates of death. Sounds like a novel, doesn't it? But it did not amuse me in the least. I wasn't constructed to pitch the letters into the fire and pick up with a Yankee girl. I wrote her a letter; I rather wish I could remember what was in that letter. Then I went to a bar in Tacoma and had some whisky, about a gallon, I suppose. If I had anything

approaching to a word of honour about me, I would give it to you that I did not know what happened until I was told that my partnership with the firm had been dissolved, and that the house and lot did not belong to me any more. I would have left the firm and sold the house, anyhow, but the crash sobered me for about three days. Then I started another jaml ore. I might have got back after the first one, and been a prominent citizen, but the second bust settled matters. Then I began to slide on the down-grade straight off, and here I am now. I could write you a book about what I have come through, if I could remember it. The worst of it is I can see that she wasn't worth losing anything in life for, but I've lost just everything, and I'm like the priest-chap in *Cleopatra*—I can't get over what I remember. If she had let me down easy, and given me warning, I should have been awfully cut up for a time, but I should have pulled through. She didn't do that, though. She lied to me all along, and married a curate, and I dare say she'll be a virtuous she-vicar later on; but the little affair broke me dead, and if I had more whisky in me I should be blubbering like a calf all round this Dive. That would have disgusted you, wouldn't it?

'Yes,' said I.



## ONE LADY AT LARGE



## ONE LADY AT LARGE

IT WAS PYJAMA-TIME on the *Madura* in the Bay of Bengal, and the incense of the very early morning cigar went up to the stainless skies. Every one knows pyjama-time—the long hour that follows the removal of the beds from the saloon skylight and the consumption of *chota hazri*. Most men know, too, that the choicest stories of many seas may be picked up then—from the long-winded histories of the Colonial sheepmaster to the crisp anecdotes of the Californian; from tales of battle, murder, and sudden death told by the Burma-returned subaltern, to the bland drivel of the Globe-trotter. The Captain, tastefully attired in pale pink, sat up on the signal-gun and tossed the husk of a banana overboard.

‘It looked in through my cabin window,’ said he, ‘and scared me nearly into a fit.’ We had just been talking about a monkey who appeared to a man in an omnibus, and haunted him till he cut his own throat. The apparition, amid howls of incredulity, was said to have been the result of excessive tea-drinking. The Captain’s apparition promised to be better.

‘It was a menagerie—the whole turn-out, lock, stock, and barrel, from the big bear to the little hippopotamus; and you can guess the size of it from the fact that they paid us a thousand pounds in freight only. We got them all accommodated somewhere forward among the deck passengers, and they whooped up terribly all along the ship for two or three days. Among other things, such as panthers and leopards, there were

sixteen giraffes, and we moored 'em fore and aft as securely as might be; but you can't get a purchase on a giraffe somehow. He slopes back too much from the bows to the stern. We were running up the Red Sea, I think, and the menagerie fairly quiet. One night I went to my cabin not feeling well. About midnight I was waked by something breathing on my face. I was quite calm and collected, for I had got it into my head that it was one of the panthers, or at least the bear; and I reached back to the rack behind me for a revolver. Then the head began to slide across my cabin—all across it—and I said to myself: "It's the big python." But I looked into his eyes—they were beautiful eyes—and saw it was one of the giraffes. Tell you, though, a giraffe has the eyes of a sorrowful nun, and this creature was just brimming over with liquid tenderness. The seven-foot neck rather spoilt the effect, but I'll always recollect those eyes.'

'Say, did you kiss the critter?' demanded the orchid-hunter *en route* for Siam.

'No; I remembered that it was darn valuable, and I didn't want to lose freight on it. I was afraid it would break its neck drawing its head out of my window—I had a big deck cabin, of course—so I shooed it out softly like a hen, and the head slid out, with those Mary Magdalene eyes following me to the last. Then I heard the quartermaster calling on heaven and earth for his lost giraffe, and then the row began all up and down the decks. The giraffe had sense enough to duck its head to avoid the awnings—we were awned from bow to stern—but it clattered about like a sick cow, the quartermaster jumping after it, and it swinging its

long neck like a flail. "Catch it, and hold it!" said the quartermaster. "Catch a typhoon," said I. "She's going overboard." The spotted fool had heaved one foot over the stern railings and was trying to get the other to follow. It was so happy at getting its head into the open I thought it would have crowed—I don't know whether giraffes crow, but it heaved up its neck for all the world like a crowing cock. "Come back to your stable," yelled the quartermaster, grabbing hold of the brute's tail.

'I was nearly helpless with laughing, though I knew if the concern went over it would be no laughing matter for me. Well, by good luck she came round—the quartermaster was a strong man at a rope's end. First of all she slewed her neck round, and I could see those tender, loving eyes under the stars sort of saying: "Cruel man! What are you doing to my tail?" Then the foot came on board, and she humped herself up under the awning, looking ready to cry with disappointment. The funniest thing was she didn't make any noise—a pig would ha' roused the ship in no time—only every time she dropped her foot on the deck it was like firing a revolver, the hoofs clicked so. We headed her towards the bows, back to her moorings—just like a policeman showing a short-sighted old woman over a crossing. The quartermaster sweated and panted and swore, but she never said anything—only whacked her old head despairingly against the awning and the funnel-case. Her feet woke up the whole ship, and by the time we had her fairly moored fore and aft, the population in their night-gear were giving us advice. Then we took up a yard or two in



all the moorings and turned in. No other animal got loose that voyage, though the old lady looked at me most reproachfully every time I came that way, and "You've blasted my young and tender innocence" was the expression of her eyes. It was all the quarter-master's fault for hauling her tail. I wonder she didn't kick him open. Well, of course, that isn't much of a yarn, but I remember once, in the *City of Venice*, we had a Malayan tapir loose on the deck, and we had to lasso him. It was this way' . . .

'The bath is ready,' said the steward, and I fled down the companion and missed the tale of the tapir.

## A SMOKE OF MANILA



## A SMOKE OF MANILA

THE MAN FROM MANILA held the floor. 'Much care had made him very lean and pale and hollow-eyed.' Added to which he smoked the cigars of his own country, and they were bad for the constitution. He foisted his Stinkadores Magnificosas and his Cupidores Imperialísimos upon all who would accept them, and wondered that the recipients of his bounty turned away and were sad. 'There is nothing,' said he, 'like a Manila cigar.' And the pink pyjamas and blue pyjamas and the spotted green pyjamas, all fluttering gracefully in the morning breeze, vowed that there was not and never would be.

'Do the Spaniards smoke these vile brands to any extent?' asked the Young Gentleman travelling for Pleasure as he inspected a fresh box of Oysters of the East. 'Smoke 'em!' said the man from Manila; 'they do nothing else day and night.' 'Ah!' said the Young Gentleman travelling for Pleasure, in the low voice of one who has received mortal injury, 'that accounts for the administration of the country being what it is. After a man has tried a couple of these things he would be ready for any crime.'

The man from Manila took no heed of the insult. 'I knew a case once,' said he, 'when a cigar saved a man from the sin of burglary and landed him in quod for five years.'

'Was he trying to kill the man who gave him the cigar?' said the Young Gentleman travelling for Pleasure.

'No, it was this way. My firm's godowns stand close to a creek. That is to say, the creek washes one face of them, and there are a few things in those godowns that might be useful to a man, such as piece-goods and cotton prints—perhaps five thousand dollars' worth. I happened to be walking through the place one day, when, for a miracle, I was not smoking. That was two years ago.'

'Great Caesar! Then he has been smoking ever since!' murmured the Young Gentleman travelling for Pleasure.

'Was not smoking,' continued the man from Manila. 'I had no business in the godowns. They were a short cut to my house. When half-way through them I fancied I saw a little curl of smoke rising from behind one of the bales. We stack our bales on low saddles, much as ricks are stacked in England. My first notion was to yell. I object to fire in godowns on principle. It is expensive, whatever the insurance may do. Luckily I sniffed before I shouted, and I sniffed good tobacco-smoke.'

'And this was in Manila, you say?' interrupted the Young Gentleman travelling for Pleasure.

'Yes, in the only place in the world where you get good tobacco. I knew we had no bales of the weed in stock, and I suspected that a man who got behind print-bales to finish his cigar might be worth looking up. I walked between the bales till I reached the smoke. It was coming from the ground under one of the saddles. That's enough, I thought, and I went away to get a couple of the Guardias Civiles—policemen, in fact. I knew if there was anything to be extracted from my

friend the bobbies would do it. A Spanish policeman carries in the day-time nothing more than a six-shooter and a *machete*, a dirk. At night he adorns himself with a repeating rifle, which he fires on the slightest provocation. Well, when the policemen arrived, they poked my friend out of his hiding-place with their dirks, hauled him out by the hair, and kicked him round the godown once or twice, just to let him know that he had been discovered. They then began to question him, and under gentle pressure—I thought he would be pulped into a jelly, but a Spanish policeman always knows when to leave off—he made a clean breast of the whole business. He was part of a gang, and was to lie in the godown all that night. At twelve o'clock a boat manned by his confederates was to drop down the creek and halt under the godown windows, while he was to hand out our bales. That was their little plan. He had lain there about three hours, and then he began to smoke. I don't think he noticed what he was doing: smoking is just like breathing to a Spaniard. He could not understand how he had betrayed himself and wanted to know whether he had left a leg sticking out under the saddles. Then the Guardias Civiles lambasted him all over again for trifling with the majesty of the law, and removed him after full confession.

'I put one of my own men under a saddle with instructions to hand out print-bales to anybody who might ask for them in the course of the night. Meantime the police made their own arrangements, which were very comprehensive.

'At midnight a lumbering old barge, big enough to hold about a hundred bales, came down the creek and

pulled up under the godown windows, exactly as if she had been one of my own barges. The eight ruffians in her whistled all the national airs of Manila as a signal to the confederate, then cooling his heels in the lock-up. But my man was ready. He opened the window and held quite a long confab with these second-hand pirates. They were all half-breeds and Roman Catholics, and the way they called upon all the blessed Saints to assist them in their work was edifying. My man began tilting out the bales quite as quickly as the confederate would have done. Only he stopped to giggle now and again, and they spat and swore at him like cats. That made him worse, and at last he dropped yelling with laughter over the half-door of the godown goods window. Then one boat came upstream and another downstream, and caught the barge stem and stern. Four Guardias Civiles were in each boat; consequently, eight repeating rifles were pointed at the barge, which was very nicely loaded with our bales. The pirates called on the Saints more fluently than ever, threw up their hands, and threw themselves on their stomachs. That was the safest attitude, and it gave them the chance of cursing their luck, the barge, the godown, the Guardias Civiles, and every Saint in the calendar. They cursed the Saints most, for the Guardias Civiles thumped 'em when their remarks became too personal. We made them put all the bales back again. Then they were handed over to justice and got five years apiece. If they had any dollars they would get out the next day. If they hadn't, they would serve their full time and no ticket-of-leave allowed. That's the whole story.'

## A SMOKE OF MANILA

‘And the only case on record,’ said the Young Gentleman travelling for Pleasure, ‘where a Manila cigar was of any use to any one.’

The man from Manila lit a fresh Cuspidor and went down to his bath.





## **‘THE RED LAMP’**



## 'THE RED LAMP'

**A** STRONG SITUATION—very strong, sir—quite the strongest one in the play, in fact.’  
‘What play?’ said a voice from the bottom of the long chair under the bulwarks.

‘*The Red Lamp.*’

‘Oh!’

Conversation ceased, and there was an industrious sucking of cheroots for the space of half an hour before the company adjourned to the card-room. It was decidedly a night for sleeping on deck—warm as the Red Sea and more moist than Bengal. Unfortunately, every square foot of the deck seemed to be occupied by earlier comers, and in despair I removed myself to the extreme foc’sle, where the anchor-chains churn rust-dyed water from the hawseholes and the lascars walk about with slush-pots.

The throb of the engines reached this part of the world as a muffled breathing which might be easily mistaken for the snoring of the ship’s cow. Occasionally one of the fowls in the coops waked and cheeped dismally as she thought of to-morrow’s entrées in the saloon, but otherwise all was very, very still; for the hour was two in the morning, when the crew of a ship are not disposed to be lively. None came to bear me company save the bo’sun’s pet kittens, and they were impolite. From where I lay I could look over the whole length of awning, ghostly white in the dark, and by their constant fluttering judged that the ship was pitching considerably. The foc’sle swung up and

down like an uneasy hydraulic lift, and a few showers of spray found their passage through the hawseholes from time to time.

Have you ever felt that maddening sense of incompetence which follows on watching the work of another man's office? The civilian is at home among his despatch-boxes and files of pending cases. 'How in the world does he do it?' asks the military man. The budding officer can arrange for the movements of two hundred men across country. 'Incomprehensible!' says the civilian. And so it is with all alien employs from our own. So it was with me. I knew that I was lying among all the materials out of which Clark Russell builds his books of the sea—the rush through the night, the gouts of foam, the singing of the wind in the rigging overhead, and the black mystery of the water—but for the life of me I could make nothing of them all.

A topsail royal flying free  
A bit of canvas was to me,  
And it was nothing more.

'Oh, that a man should have but one poor little life and one incomplete set of experiences to crowd into it!' I sighed as the bells of the ship lulled me to sleep and the look-out man crooned a dreary song.

I slept far into the night, for the clouds gathered over the sky, the stars died out and all grew as black as pitch. But we never slackened speed; we beat the foam to left and right with clanking of chains, rattling of bow-ports, and savage noises of ripping and rending from the cutwater ploughing among the luminous

## ‘THE RED LAMP’

sea-beasts. I was roused by the words of the man in the smoking-room: ‘A strong situation, sir, very strong—quite the strongest in the play, in fact—*The Red Lamp*, y’know.’

I thought over the sentence lazily for a time, and then—surely there was a red lamp in the air somewhere—an intolerable glare that singed the shut eyelids. I opened my eyes and looked forward. The lascar was asleep, his face bowed on his knees, though he ought to have been roused by the hum of a rapidly approaching city, by the noises of men and women talking and laughing and drinking. I could hear it not half a mile away: it was strange that his ears should be closed.

The night was so black that one could hardly breathe; and yet where did the glare from the red lamp come from? Not from our ship: she was silent and asleep—the officers on the bridge were asleep; there was no one of four hundred souls awake but myself. And the glare of the red lamp went up to the zenith. Small wonder. A quarter of a mile in front of us rolled a big steamer under full steam, and she was heading down on us without a word of warning. Would the look-out man never look out? Would their crew be as fast asleep as ours? It was impossible, for the other ship hummed with populous noises, and there was the defiant tinkle of a piano rising above all. She should have altered her course, or blown her whistle.

I held my breath while an eternity went by, counted out by the throbbing of my heart and the engines. I knew that it was my duty to call, but I knew also that no one could hear me. Moreover, I was intensely

interested in the approaching catastrophe; interested, you will understand, as one whom it did in no wise concern. By the light of the luminous sea thrown forward in sheets under the forefoot of the advancing steamer I could discern the minutest details of her structure from foc'sle to bridge. Abast the bridge she was crowded with merry-makers—seemed to be, in fact, a P. & O. vessel given up to a ball. I wondered as I leaned over the bulwarks what they would say when the crash came—whether they would shriek very loudly—whether the men and women would try to rush to our decks, or whether we would rush on to theirs. It would not matter in the least, for at the speed we were driving both vessels would go down together locked through the deeps of the sea. It occurred to me then that the sea would be cold, and that instead of choking decently I might be one in a mad rush for the boats—might be crippled by a falling spar or wrenched plate and left on the heeling decks to die. Then Terror came to me—Fear, gross and overwhelming as the bulk of the night—Despair unrelieved by a single ray of hope.

We were not fifty yards apart when the passengers on the stranger caught sight of us and shrieked aloud. I saw a man pick up his child from one of the benches and futilely attempt to climb the rigging. Then we closed—her name-plate ten feet above ours, looking down into our forehatch. I heard the grinding as of a hundred querns, the ripping of the tough bow-plates, and the pistol-like report of displaced rivets followed by the rush of the sea. We were sinking in mid-ocean.

## ‘THE RED LAMP’

‘Beg y’ pardon,’ said the quartermaster, shaking me by the arm, ‘but you must have been sleeping in the moonlight for the last two hours, and that’s not good for the eyes. Didn’t seem to make you sleep easy, either.’ I opened my eyes heavily. My face was swollen and aching, for on my forehead lay the malignant splendour of the moon. The glare of the red lamp had vanished with the brilliantly lighted ship, but the ghastly shrieks of her drowning crew continued.

‘What’s that?’ I asked tremulously of the quartermaster. ‘Was it real?’

‘Pork chops in the saloon to-morrow,’ said the quartermaster. ‘The butcher he got up at four bells to put the old porker out of the way. Them’s his dying ejaculations.’





## THE SHADOW OF HIS HAND



## THE SHADOW OF HIS HAND

‘I COME FROM SAN JOSÉ,’ he said. ‘San José, Calaveras County, California; that’s my place.’ I pricked up my ears at the mention of Calaveras County. Bret Harte has made that sacred ground.

‘Yes?’ said I politely. Always be polite to a gentleman from Calaveras County. For aught you know he may be a lineal descendant of the great Colonel Starbottle.

‘Did you ever know Vermilyea of San Luis Obispo?’ continued the stranger, chewing the plug of meditation.

‘No,’ said I. Heaven alone knows where lies San Luis Obispo, but I was not going to expose my ignorance. Besides, there might be a story at the back of it all. ‘What was the special weakness of Mister Vermilyea?’

‘Vermilyea! Him weak! Lot Vermilyea never had a weakness that you might call a weakness until subsequent events transpired. Then that weakness developed into White Rye. All Westerners drink White Rye. On the Eastern coast they drink Bourbon. Lot tried both when his heart was broken. Both. By the quart.’

‘D’you happen to remember what broke his heart?’ I said.

‘This must be your first trip to the States, sir, or you would know that Lot’s heart was broken by his father-in-law. Lot’s congregation—he took to religion—always said that he had no business fooling with a

father-in-law. A good many other people said that too. But I always adhered to Lot. "Why don't you kill the animal, Lot?" I used to say. "I can't. He's the father of my wife," Lot used to say. "Loan him money then and settle him on the other side of the States," I used to say. "The old clam won't move," Lot used to say.'

'Half a minute. What was the actual trouble between Vermilyea and his father-in-law? Did he borrow money?'

'I'm coming to that,' said the stranger calmly. 'It arrived this way. Lot had a notion to get married. Some men get that idea. He went to 'Frisco and pawned out his heart—Lot had a most feeling heart, and that was his ruin—to a girl who lived at back of Kearney Street. I've forgotten her given name, but the old man's name was Dougherty. Guess he was a naturalised Irishman. The old man did not see the merits of Lot when he went sparking after the girl evenings. He fired Lot out of the stoop three or four times. Lot didn't hit him because he was fond of the daughter. He just quit like a lamb; the old man welting into him with anything that came handy—sticks and besoms, and such. Lot endured that, being a tough man. Every time Lot was fired out he would wait till the old man was pretty well pumped out. Then he used to turn round and say, "When's the wedding to be?" Dougherty used to ramp around Lot while the girl hid herself till the breeze abated. He had a peculiar aversion to domiciliary visits from Lot, had Dougherty. I've my own theory on the subject. I'll explain it later on. At last Dougherty got tired of Lot and his peacefulness. The girl stuck to him for all she was worth.

Lot never budged. "If you want to marry her," said the old man, "just drop your long-suffering for half an hour. Stand up to me, Lot, and we'll run this thing through with our hands." "If I must, I must," said Lot, and with that they began the argument up and down the parlour floor. Lot he was fighting for his wife. He set considerable value on the girl. The old man he was fighting for the fun of the affair. Lot whipped. He handled the old man tenderly out of regard for his connections. All the same he fixed him up pretty thoroughly. When he crawled off the old man he had received his permission to marry the girl. Old man Dougherty ran round 'Frisco advertising Lot for the tallest fighter in the town. Lot was a respectable sort of man and considerable absorbed in preparing for his wedding. It didn't please him any to receive invitations from the boss fighting-men of 'Frisco—professional invitations, you must understand. I guess he cussed the father-in-law to be.

'When he was married, he concluded to locate in 'Frisco, and started business there. A married man don't keep his muscle up any. Old man Dougherty he must have counted on that. By the time Lot's first child was born he came around suffering for a fight. He painted Lot's house crimson. Lot endured that. He got a hold of the baby and began yanking it around by the legs to see if it could squeal worth listening to. Lot stretched him. Old man Dougherty howled with delight. Lot couldn't well hand his father-in-law over to the police, so they had it, knuckle and tooth, all round the front floor, and the old man he quit by the window, considerable mashed up. Lot was fair spent,

not having kept up his muscle. My notion is that old man Dougherty being a boss fighter couldn't get his fighting regularly till Lot married into the family. Then he reckoned on a running discussion to warm up his bones. Lot was too fond of his wife to disoblige him. Any man in his senses would have brought the old man before the courts, or clubbed him, or laid him out stiff. But Lot was always tender-hearted.

'Soon as old man Dougherty got his senses together off the pavement, he argued that Lot was considerable less of a fighter than he had been. That pleased the old man. He was plastered and caulked up by the doctors, and as soon as he could move he interviewed Lot and made remarks. Lot didn't much care what he said, but when he came to casting reflections on the parentage of the baby, Lot shut the office door and played round for half an hour till the walls glittered like the evening sun. Old man Dougherty crawled out, but he crowed as he crawled. "Praise the blessed Saints," he said, "I kin get my fighting along o' my meals. Lot, you have prolonged my life a century."

'Guess Lot would like to see him dead now. He is an old man, but most amazing tough. He has been fighting Lot for a matter of three years. If Lot made a lucky bit of trade, the old man would come along and fight him for luck. If Lot lost a little, the old man would fight him to teach him safe speculation. It took all Lot's time to keep even with him. No man in business can 'tend his business and fight in streaks. Lot's trade fell off every time he laid himself out to stretch the old man. Worst of it was that when Lot was made a Deacon of his church, the old man fought him most

terrible for the honour of the Roman Catholic Church. Lot whipped, of course. He always whipped. Old man Dougherty went round among the other Deacons and lauded Lot for a boss pugilist, not meaning to hurt Lot's prospects. Lot had to explain the situation to the church in general. They accepted it.

'Old man Dougherty he fought on. Age had no effect on him. Lot always whipped, but nothing would satisfy the old man. Lot shook all his teeth out till his gums were as bare as a sand-bar. Old man Dougherty came along lisping his invitation to the dance. They fought.

'When Lot shifted to San Luis Obispo, old man Dougherty he came along too—craving for his fight. It was cocktails and plug to him. It grew on him. Lot handled him too gently because of the wife. The old man could come to the scratch once a month, and always at the most inconvenient time. They fought.

'Last I heard of Lot he was sinking into the tomb. "It's not the fighting," he said to me. "It's the darned monotony of the circus. He knows I can whip him, but he won't rest satisfied." "Lay him out, Lot," said I; "fracture his cranium or gouge him. This show is foolish all round." "I can't lay him out," said Lot. "He's my father-in-law. But don't it strike you I've a deal to be thankful for? If he had been a Jew he'd have fought on Sundays when I was doing Deacon. I've been too gentle with him; the old man knows my soft place, but I've a deal to be thankful for."

'Strikes me that thankfulness of Lot's sort is nothing more nor less than cussed affectation. Say?'

I said nothing.





## A LITTLE MORE BEEF



## A LITTLE MORE BEEF

**A** LITTLE MORE BEEF, PLEASE,' said the fat man with the grey whiskers and the spattered waist-coat. 'You can't eat too much o' good beef—not even when the prices are going up hoof over hock.' And he settled himself down to load in a fresh cargo.

Now, this is how the fat man had come by his meal. One thousand miles away, a red Texan steer was preparing to go to bed for the night in the company of his fellows—myriads of his fellows. From dawn till late dusk he had loafed across the leagues of grass and grunted savagely as each mouthful proved to his mind that grass was not what he had known it in his youth. But the steer was wrong. That summer had brought great drought to Montana and Northern Dakota. The feed was withering day by day, and the more prudent stock-owners had written to the East for manufactured provender. Only the little cactus that grows with the grasses appeared to enjoy itself. The cattle certainly did not; and the cowboys from the very beginning of spring had used language considered profane even for the cowboy. What their ponies said has never been recorded. The ponies had the worst time of all, and at each nightly camp whispered to each other their longings for the winter, when they would be turned out on the freezing ranges—galled from wither to croup, but riderless—thank Heaven, riderless! On these various miseries the sun looked down impartial. His business was to bake the ground and ruin the grasses.

The cattle—the acres of huddled cattle—were rest-

less. In the first place, they were forced to scatter for graze; and in the second, the heat told on their tempers and made them prod each other with their long horns. In the heart of the herd you would have thought men were fighting with single-sticks. On the outskirts, posted at quarter-mile intervals, sat the cowboys on their ponies, the brims of their hats tilted over their sun-skinned noses, their feet out of the big brown-leather hooded stirrups, and their hands gripping the horn of the heavy saddle to keep themselves from falling on to the ground—asleep. A cowboy can sleep at full gallop; on the other hand, he can keep awake also at full gallop for eight-and-forty hours and wear down six unamiable bronchos in the process.

Lafe Parmalee; Schwink, the German, who could not ride but had a blind affection for cattle from the branding-yard to the butcher's block; Michigan, so called because he said he came from California but spoke not the Californian tongue; Jim from San Diego, to distinguish him from other Jims, and The Corpse, were the outposts of the herd. The Corpse had won his name from a statement, made in the fullness of much McBrayer whisky, that he had once been a graduate of Corpus Christi. He spoke truth, but to the wrong audience. The inhabitants of the Elite Saloon, after several attempts to get the hang of the name, dubbed the speaker The Corpse, and as long as he cinched a broncho or jingled a spur within four hundred miles of Livingston—yea, far to the southward, even on the unexplored borders of the Sheep-eater Indians—he was known by that unlovely name. How he had passed from college to cattle no man knew,

and, according to the etiquette of the West, no man asked. He was not by any means a tenderfoot—had no unmanly weakness for washing, did not in the least object to appearing at the wild and wonderful reunions held nightly in ‘Miss Minnie’s parlour,’ whose flaring advertisement did not in the least disturb the proprieties of Wachoma Junction, and, in common with his associates, was, when drunk, ready to hoot at anything or anybody. He was not proud. He had condescended to take in hand and educate a young and promising Chicago drummer, who by evil fate had wandered into that wilderness, where all his cunning was of no account; and from that youth’s quivering hand—outstretched by command—had shot away the top of a wineglass. The Corpse was recognised in the freemasonry of the craft as ‘one of the C.M.R.’s boys, and tough at that.’

The C.M.R. controlled much cattle, and their slaughter-houses in Chicago bubbled the blood of beeves all day long. Their salt-beef fed the sailor on the sea, and their iced best firsts, the housekeeper in the London suburbs. Not even the firm knew how many cowboys they employed, but all the firm knew that on the fourteenth day of July their stockyards at Wachoma Junction were to be filled with two thousand head of cattle, ready for immediate shipment to Chicago while prices yet ruled high, and before the grass had withered utterly. Lafe, Michigan, Jim, The Corpse, and the others knew this too, and were heartily glad of it, because they would be paid up in Chicago for their half-year’s work, and would then do their best towards painting that town in

purest vermillion. They would get drunk; they would gamble, and would otherwise enjoy themselves till they were broke; and then they would hire out again.

The sun dropped behind the rolling hills; and the cattle halted for the night, cheered and cooled by a little wandering breeze. The red steer's mother had been caught in a hailstorm five years ago. Till she went the way of all cow-flesh she missed no opportunity of telling her son to beware of the hot day and the cold wind that does not know its own mind. 'When it blows five ways at once,' said she, 'and makes your horns feel creepy, get away, my son. Follow the time-honoured instinct of our tribe, and run. I ran'—she looked ruefully at the scars on her side—'but that was in a barb-wire country, and it hurt me. None the less, run.' The red steer chewed his cud, and the little wind out of the darkness played round his horns—all five ways at once. The cowboys lifted up their voices in unmelodious song, that the cattle might know where they were, and began slowly walking round the recumbent herd. 'Do anybody's horns feel creepy?' queried the red steer of his neighbours. 'My mother told me'—and he repeated the tale, to the edification of the yearlings and the three-year-olds breathing heavily at his side.

The song of the cowboys rose higher. The cattle bowed their heads. Their men were at hand. They were safe. Something had happened to the quiet stars. They were dying out one by one, and the wind was freshening. 'Bless my hoofs!' muttered a yearling, 'my horns are beginning to feel creepy.' Softly the red

steer lifted himself from the ground. 'Come away,' quoth he to the yearling. 'Come away to the outskirts, and we'll move. My mother said . . .' The innocent fool followed, and a white heifer saw them move. Being a woman she naturally bellowed 'Timber wolves!' and ran forward blindly into a dun steer dreaming over clover. Followed the thunder of cattle rising to their feet, and the triple crack of a whip. The little wind had dropped for a moment, only to fall on the herd with a shriek and a few stinging drops of hail, that stung as keenly as the whips. The herd broke into a trot, a canter, and then a mad gallop. Black fear was behind them, black night in front. They headed into the night, bellowing with terror; and at their side rode the men with the whips. The ponies grunted as they felt the raking spurs. They knew that an all-night gallop lay before them, and woe betide the luckless cayuse that stumbled in that ride. Then fell the hail—blinding and choking and flogging in one and the same stroke. The herd opened like a fan. The red steer headed a contingent he knew not whither. A man with a whip rode at his right flank. Behind him the lightning showed a field of glimmering horns, and of muzzles flecked with foam; a field of red terror-strained eyes and shaggy frontlets. The man looked back also, and his terror was greater than that of the beasts. The herd had surrounded him in the darkness. His salvation lay in the legs of Whisky Peat—and Whisky Peat knew it—knew it until an unseen gopher-hole received his near forefoot as he strained every nerve—in the heart of the flying herd, with the red steer at his flanks. Then, being only an overworked



## ABAF THE FUNNEL

cayuse, Whisky Peat fell, and the red steer fancied that there was something soft on the ground.

It was Michigan, Jim, and Lafe who at last brought the herd to a standstill as the dawn was breaking. 'What's come to The Corpse?' quoth Lafe. Jim loosened the girths of his quivering pony and made answer slowly: 'Onless I'm a blamed fool, the gentleman is now livin' up to his durned appellation 'bout fifteen miles back—what there is of him and the cayuse.' 'Let's go and look,' said Lafe, shuddering slightly, for the morning air, you must understand, was raw. 'Let's go to—a much hotter place than Texas,' responded Jim. 'Get the steers to the Junction first. Guess what's left of The Corpse will keep.'

And it did. And that was how the fat man in Chicago got his beef. It belonged to the red steer.

## THE HISTORY OF A FALL



## THE HISTORY OF A FALL

*Mere English will not do justice to the event. Let us attempt it according to the custom of the French. Thus and so following:—*

**L**ISTEN TO A HISTORY of the most painful—and of the most true. You others, the Governors, the Lieutenant-Governors, and the Commissioners of the Oriental Indias.

It is you, foolishly outside of the truth in prey to illusions so blind that I of them remain so stupefied—it is to you that I address myself!

Know you Sir Cyril Wollobie, K.C.S.I., C.M.G., and all the other little things?

He was of the Sacred Order of Yourself—a man responsible enormously—charged of the conservation of millions . . .

Of people. That is understood. The Indian Government conserves not its rupees.

He was the well-loved of kings. I have seen the Viceroy—which is the Lorr-Maire—embrace him of both arms.

That was in Simla. All things are possible in Simla. Even embraces.

His wife? *Mon Dieu*, his wife!

The ahuried imagination prostrates itself at the remembrance of the splendours Orientals of the Lady Cyril—the very respectable the Lady Wollobie.

That was in Simla. All things are possible in Simla. Even wives. In those days I was what you call a Schnobb. I am now a much larger Schnobb. *Voilà* the

only difference. Thus it is true that travel expands the mind.

But let us return to our Wollobies.

I admired that man there with the both hands. I crawled before the Lady Wollobie—platonically. The man the most brave would be only platonic towards that lady. And I was also afraid. Subsequently I went to a dance. The wine equalled not the splendour of the Wollobies. Nor the food. But there was upon the floor an open space—large and park-like. It protected the dignity Wollobicalisienne. It was guarded by Aides-de-Camp. With blue silk in their coat-tails—turned up. With pink eyes and white moustaches to ravish. Also turned up.

To me addressed himself an Aide-de-Camp.

That was in Simla. To-day I do not speak to Aides-de-Camp.

I confine myself exclusively to the cab-drivair. He does not know so much bad language, but he can drive better.

I approached, under the protection of the Aide-de-Camp, the luminosity of Sir Wollobie.

The world entire regarded.

The band stopped. The lights burned blue. A domestic dropped a plate.

It was an inspiring moment.

From the summit of Jakko forty-five monkeys looked down upon the crisis.

Sir Wollobie spoke.

To me in that expanse of floor cultured and park-like. He said: 'I have long desired to make your acquaintance.'

The blood bouilloned in my head. I became pink.

## THE HISTORY OF A FALL

I was aneantied under the weight of an embarras insuprimable.

At that moment Sir Wollobie became oblivious of my personality. That was his custom.

Wiping my face upon my coat-tails I refugied myself among the foules.

*I had been spoken to by Sir Wollobie.* That was in Simla. That also is history.

Pass now several years. To the day before yesterday!

This also is history—farcical, immense, tragi-comic, but true.

Know you the Totnam Cortrode?

Here lives Maple, who sells washing appliances and tables of exotic legs.

Here voyages also a Omnibuse Proletariat.

That is to say for one penny.

Two pence if the refined volupté of the Aristocrat.

I am of the People.

Upon the funeste tumbril of the Omnibuse Proletariat I take my seat.

I demand air outside upon the roof.

I will have all my penny.

The tumbril advances.

A man aged loses his equilibrium and deposits himself into my lap.

Following the custom of the Brutal Londoner I demand the Devil where he shoves himself.

He apologises supplicatorically.

I grunt.

Encore the tumbril shakes herself.

I appropriate the desired seat of the old man.

## ABAST THE FUNNEL

The conductaire cries to loud voice: 'Fare, Guvnor.'

He produces one penny.

A reminiscence phantasmal provokes itself.

I beat him on the back.

It is Sir Wollobie; the ex-Everything!

Also the ex-Everything else!

Figure you the situation!

He clasps my hand.

As a child clasps the hand of its nurse.

He demands of me particular resignments of my health. It is to him a matter important.

Other time he regulated the health of forty-five millions.

I riposte. I inquire of his liver—his pancreas, his abdomen.

The sacred internals of Sir Wollobie!

He has them all. And they all make him ill.

He is very lonely. He speaks of his wife. There is no Lady Wollobie, but a woman in a flat in Bayswater who cries in her sleep for more curricles.

He does not say this, but I understand.

He derides the Council of the Indian Office. He imprecates the Government.

He curses the journals.

He had a Clob. He curses that Clob.

Females with teeth monstrous explain to him the theory of Government.

Men of long hair, the psychologues of the paint-pots, correct him tenderly, but from above.

He has known of the actualities of life—Death, Power, Responsibility, Honour—the Good accomplished, the effacement of Wrong for forty years.

THE HISTORY OF A FALL

There remains to him a seat in a penny 'bus.

If I do not take him from that.

I rap my heels on the knife-board. I sing 'tra la la.'  
I am also well disposed to larmes.

He courbes himself underneath an ulstaire and he damns the fog to eternity.

He wills not that I leave him. He desires that I come to dinner.

I am grave. I think upon Lady Wollobie—short of *chaprassis*—at the Clob Not in Bayswater.

I accept. He will bore me affreusely, but . . . I have taken his seat.

He descends from the tumbril of his humiliation, and the street hawker rolls a barrow up his waistcoat.

Then intervenes the fog—dense, impenetrable, hopeless, without end.

It is because of the fog that there is a drop upon the end of my nose so chiselled.

Gentlemen the Governors, the Lieutenant-Governors and the Commissionaires, behold the doom prepared.

I am descended to the gates of your Life in Death. Which is Brompton or Bayswater.

You do not believe? You will try the constituencies when you return; is it not so?

You will fail. As others failed.

Your seat waits you on the top of an Omnibuse Proletariat.

I shall be there.

You will embrace me as a shipwrecked man embraces a log. You will be 'dam' glad t' see me.'

I shall grin.





## GRIFFITHS THE SAFE MAN



## GRIFFITHS THE SAFE MAN

AS THE TITLE INDICATES, this story deals with the safeness of Griffiths the safe man, the secure person, the reliable individual, the sort of man you would bank with. I am proud to write about Griffiths, for I owe him a pleasant day. This story is dedicated to my friend Griffiths, the remarkably trustworthy mortal.

In the beginning there were points about Griffiths. He quoted proverbs. A man who quotes proverbs is confounded by proverbs. He is also confounded by his friends. But I never confounded Griffiths—not even in that supreme moment when the sweat stood on his brow in agony and his teeth were fixed like bayonets and he swore horribly. Even then, I say, I sat on my own trunk, the trunk that opened, and told Griffiths that I had always respected him, but never more than at the present moment. He was so safe, y’know.

Safeness is a matter of no importance to me. If my trunk won’t lock when I jump on it thrice, I strap it up and go on to something else. If my carpet-bag is too full, I let the tails of shirts and the ends of ties bubble over and go down the street with the affair. It all comes right in the end, and if it does not, who is man that he should fight against Fate?

But Griffiths is not constructed in that manner. He says: ‘Safe bind is safe find.’ That, rather, is what he used to say. He has seen reason to alter his views. Everything about Griffiths is safe—entirely safe. His trunk is locked by two hermetical gun-metal double-

end Chubb locks; his bedding-roll opens to a letter-padlock capable of two million combinations; his hat-box has a lever patent safety on it; and the grief of his life is that he cannot lock up the ribs of his umbrella safely. If you could get at his soul you would find it ready strapped up and labelled for Heaven. That is Griffiths.

When we went to Japan together, Griffiths kept all his money under lock and key. I carried mine in my coat-tail pocket. But all Griffiths' contraptions did not prevent him from spending exactly as much as I did. You see, when he had worried his way through the big strap, and the little strap, and the slide-valve, and the spring lock, and the key that turned twice and a quarter, he felt as though he had earned any money he found, whereas I could get masses of sinful wealth by merely pulling out my handkerchief—dollars and five dollars and ten dollars, all mixed up with the tobacco or flying down the road. They looked much too pretty to spend.

'Safe bind, safe find,' said Griffiths in the treaty ports of Japan.

He never really began to lock things up severely till we got our passports to travel up-country. He took charge of mine for me, on the ground that I was an imbecile. As you are asked for your passport at every other shop, all the hotels, most of the places of amusement, and on the top of each hill, I got to appreciate Griffiths' self-sacrifice. He would be biting a strap with his teeth or calculating the combinations of his padlocks among a ring of admiring Japanese while I went for a walk into the interior.

'Safe bind, safe find,' said Griffiths. That was true, because I was bound to find Griffiths somewhere near his beloved keys and straps. He never seemed to see that half the pleasure of his trip was being strapped and keyed out of him.

We never had any serious difficulty about the passports in the whole course of our wanderings. What I purpose to describe now is merely an incident of travel. It had no effect on myself, but it nearly broke Griffiths' heart.

We were travelling from Kyoto to Otsu along a very dusty road full of pretty girls. Every time I stopped to play with one of them Griffiths grew impatient. He had telegraphed for rooms at the only hotel in Otsu, and was afraid that there would be no accommodation. There were only three rooms in the hotel, and 'Safe bind, safe find,' said Griffiths. He was telegraphing ahead for something.

Our hotel was three-quarters Japanese and one-quarter European. If you walked across it it shook, and if you laughed the roof fell off. Strange Japanese came in and dined with you, and Jap maidens looked through the windows of the bathroom while you were bathing.

We had hardly put the luggage down before the proprietor asked for our passports. He asked me of all people in the world. 'I have the passports,' said Griffiths with pride. 'They are in the yellow-hide bag. Turn it very carefully on to the right side, my good man. You have no such locks in Japan, I'm quite certain.' Then he knelt down and brought out a bunch of keys as big as his fist. You must know that every

Japanese carries a little Europe-made handbag with nickel fastenings. They take an interest in handbags.

'Safe bind, safe— D—n the key! What's wrong with it?' said Griffiths.

The hotel proprietor bowed and smiled very politely for at least five minutes, Griffiths crawling over and under and round and about his bag the while. 'It's a percussating compensator,' said he, half to himself. 'I've never known a percussating compensator do this before.' He was getting heated and red in the face.

'Key stuck, eh? I told you those fooling little spring locks are sure to go wrong sooner or later,' I said.

'Fooling little devils. It's a percussating comp— There goes the key. Now it won't move either way. I'll give you the passports to-morrow. Passport *kul—demang—mañana*—catchee in a little time. Won't that do for you?'

Griffiths was getting really angry. The proprietor was more polite than ever. He bowed and left the room. 'That's a good little chap,' said Griffiths. 'Now we'll settle down and see what the mischief's wrong with this bag. You catch one end.'

'Not in the least,' I said. "'Safe bind, safe find.'" You did the binding. How can you expect me to do the finding? I'm an imbecile unfit to be trusted with a passport, and now I'm going for a walk.' The Japanese are really the politest nation in the world. When the hotel proprietor returned with a policeman he did not at once thrust the man on Griffiths' notice. He put him in the veranda and let him clank his sword gently once or twice.

'Little chap's brought a blacksmith,' said Griffiths,

but when he saw the policeman his face became ugly. The policeman came into the room and tried to assist. Have you ever seen a four-foot policeman in white cotton gloves and a stand-up collar lunging at a percussating compensator lock with a five-foot sword? I enjoyed the sight for a few minutes before I went out to look at Otsu, which is a nice town. No one hindered me. Griffiths was so completely the head of the firm that had I set the town on fire he would have been held responsible.

I went to a temple, and a policeman said 'Passport.' I said, 'The other gentleman has got.' 'Where is other gentleman?' said the policeman, syllable by syllable, in the Ollendorffian style. 'In the ho-tel,' said I; and he waddled off to catch him. It seemed to me that I could do a great deal towards cheering Griffiths all alone in his bedroom with that wicked bad lock, the hotel proprietor, the policeman, the room-boy, and the girl who helped one to bathe. With this idea I stood in front of four policemen, and they all asked for my passport and were all sent to the hotel, syllable by syllable—I mean one by one.

Some soldiers of the 9th Infantry were strolling about the streets, and they were idle. It is unwise to let a soldier be idle. He may get drunk. When the fourth policeman said: 'Where is other gentleman?' I said: 'In the hotel, and take soldiers—those soldiers.'

'How many soldiers?' said the policeman firmly.

'Take all soldiers,' I said. There were four files in the street just then. The policeman spoke to them, and they caught up their big sword-bayonets, nearly as long as themselves, and waddled after him.



I followed them, but first I bought some sweets and gave one to a child. That was enough. Before I had reached the hotel I had a tail of fifty babies. These I seduced into the long passage that ran through the house, and then I slid the grating that answers to the big hall-door. That house was full—pit, boxes, and galleries—for Griffiths had created an audience of his own, and I also had not been idle.

The four files of soldiers and the five policemen were marking time on the boards of Griffiths' room, while the landlord and the landlord's wife, and the two scullions, and the bath-girl and the cook-boy, and the boy who spoke English, and the boy who didn't, and the boy who tried to, and the cook, filled all the space that wasn't devoted to babies asking the foreigner for more sweets.

Somewhere in the centre of the mess was Griffiths and a yellow-hide bag. I don't think he had looked up once since I left, for as he raised his eyes at my voice I heard him cry: 'Good Heavens! Are they going to train the guns of the city on me? What's the meaning of the regiment? I'm a British subject.'

'What are you looking for?' I asked.

'The passports—your passports—the double-dyed passports! Oh, give a man room to use his arms. Get me a hatchet.'

'The passports, the passports!' I said. 'Have you looked in your great-coat? It's on the bed, and there's a blue envelope in it that looks like a passport. You put it there before you left Kyoto.'

Griffiths looked. The landlord looked. The landlord took the passports and bowed. The five policemen

bowed and went out one by one; the 9th Infantry formed fours and went out; the household bowed, and there was a long silence. Then the bath-girl began to giggle.

When Griffiths wanted to speak to me I was on the other side of the regiment of children in the passage, and he had time to reflect before he could work his way through them.

They formed his guard-of-honour when he took the bag to the locksmith.

I abode on the mountains of Otsu till dinner-time.



**IT!**



IT!

THERE WAS NO TALK OF IT for a fortnight. We spoke of latitude and longitude and the proper manufacture of sherry cobblers, while the steamer cut open a glassy-smooth sea. Then we turned towards China and drank farewell to the nearer East.

'We shall reach Hong Kong without being it,' said the nervous lady.

'Nobody of ordinary strength of mind ever *was* it,' said the big fat man with the voice. I kept my eyes on the big fat man. He boasted too much.

The China Seas are governed neither by wind nor calm. Deep down under the sapphire waters sits a green-and-yellow devil who suffers from indigestion perpetually. When he is unwell he troubles the waters above with his twistings and writhings. Thus it happens that it is never calm in the China Seas.

The sun was shining brightly when the big fat man with the voice came up the companion and looked at the horizon.

'Hah!' said he, 'calm as ditch-water! Now I remember when I was in the *Florida* in '80, meeting a tidal-wave that turned us upside-down for five minutes, and most of the people inside-out, by Jove!' He expatiated at length on the heroism displayed by himself when 'even the Captain was down, sir!'

I said nothing, but I kept my eyes upon the strong man.

The sun continued to shine brightly, and it also kept an eye in the same direction. I went to the far-off

foc'sle, where the sheep and the cow and the bo'sun and the second-class passengers dwell together in amity. 'Bo'sun,' said I, 'how's her head?'

'Direckly in front of her, sir,' replied that ill-mannered soul, 'but we shall be meetin' a head-sea in half an hour that'll put your head atween of your legs. Go aft an' tell that to them first-class passengers.'

I went aft, but I said nothing. We went, later, to tiffin, and there was a fine funereal smell of stale curries and tinned meats in the air. Conversation was animated, for most of the passengers had been together for five weeks and had developed two or three promising flirtations. I was a stranger—a minnow among Tritons—a third man in the cabin. Only those who have been a third man in the cabin know what this means. Suddenly and without warning our ship curtsied. It was neither a bob nor a duck nor a lurch, but a long, sweeping, stately old-fashioned curtsy. Followed a lull in the conversation. I was distinctly conscious that I had left my stomach two feet in the air, and waited for the return roll to join it. 'Prettily the old hooker rides, doesn't she?' said the strong man. 'I hope she won't do it often,' said the pretty lady with the changing complexion.

'Wha-hoop! What—wha—wha—willy *whoop*!' said the screw, that had managed to come out of the water and was racing wildly.

'Good Heavens! Is the ship going down?' said the fat lady, clutching her own private claret-bottle that she might not die athirst. The ship went down at the word—with a drunken lurch down she went, and a

smothered yell from one of the cabins showed that there was water in the sea. The portholes closed with a clash, and we rose and fell on the swell of the bo'sun's head-sea. The conversation died out. Some complained that the saloon was stuffy, and fled upstairs to the deck. The strong man brought up the rear.

'Ooshy—ooshy—wooshy—woggle *wop!*' cried a big wave without a head. 'Get up, old girl!' and he smacked the ship most disrespectfully under the counter, and she squirmed as she took the lift of the next sea.

'She—ah—rides very prettily,' repeated the strong man as the companion stairs spurned him from them and he wound his arms round the nearest steward.

'Dam' prettily,' said the second officer. 'I'm going to lie down. Never could stand the China Seas.'

'Most refreshing thing in the world,' said the strong man faintly.

I took counsel purely with myself, which is to say, my stomach, and perceived that the worst would not befall me.

'Come to the foc'sle, then, and feel the wind,' said I to the strong man. The plover's-egg eyes of three yellowish-green girls were upon him.

'With pleasure,' said he, and I bore him away to where the cutwater was putting up the scared flying-fishes as a spaniel flushes game. In front of us was the illimitable blue, lightly ridged by the procession of the big blind rollers. Up rose the stem till six feet of the red paint stood clear above the blue—from twenty-three feet to eighteen I could count as I leaned over. Then the sapphire crashed into splintered crystal with



a musical jar, and the white spray licked the anchor channels as we drove down and down, sucking at the sea. I kept my eye upon the strong man, and I noticed that his mouth was slightly open, the better to inhale the rushing wind. When I looked a second time he was gone. The driven spray was scarcely quicker in its flight. My excellent stomach behaved with temperance and chastity. I enjoyed the foc'sle, and my delight was the greater when I reflected on the strong man. Unless I was much mistaken, he would know all about it in half an hour.

I went aft, and a lull between two waves heard the petulant pop of a champagne cork. No one drinks champagne after tiffin except . . . *It*.

The strong man had ordered the champagne. There were bottles of it flying about the quarter-deck. The engaged couple were sipping it out of one glass, but their faces were averted like our parents of old. They were ashamed.

'You may go! You may go to Hong Kong for me!' shouted half-a-dozen little waves together, pulling the ship several ways at once. She rolled statelily, and from that moment settled down to the work of the evening. I cannot blame her, for I am sure she did not know her own strength. It didn't hurt her to lie on her side, and play cat-and-mouse, and puss-in-the-corner, and hide-and-seek, but it destroyed the passengers. One by one they sank into long chairs and gazed at the sky. But even there the little white clouds moved, and there was not one stable thing in heaven above or the waters beneath. My virtuous and very respectable stomach behaved with integrity and resolution. I

IT!

treated it to a gin cocktail, which I sucked by the side of the strong man, who told me in confidence that he had been overcome by the sun at the foc'sle. Sun-fever does not make people cold and clammy and blue. I sat with him and tried to make him talk about the *Florida* and his voyages in the past. He evaded me and went down below. Three minutes later I followed him with a thick cheroot. Into his bunk I went, for I knew he would be helpless. He was—he was—he was. He wallowed supine, and I stood in the doorway smoking.

‘What is it?’ said I.

He wrestled with his pride—his wicked pride—but he would not tell a lie.

‘It,’ said he. And it was so.

. . . . .  
The rolling continues. The ship is a shambles, and I have six places on each side of me all to myself.



## A FALLEN IDOL



## A FALLEN IDOL

WILL THE PUBLIC BE GOOD ENOUGH to look into this business? It has sent Crewe to bed and Mottleby is applying for Home leave, and I've lost my faith in man altogether, and the Club gives it up. Trivey is the only man who is unaffected by the catastrophe, and he says, 'I told you so.' We were all proud of Trivey at the Club, and would have crowned him with wreaths of bougainvillea had he permitted the liberty. But Trivey was an austere man. The utmost that he permitted himself to say was: 'I can stretch a little bit when I'm in the humour.' We called him The Monumental Liar. Nothing that the Club offered was too good for Trivey. He had the soft chair opposite the thermantidote in the hot weather, and he made up his own four at whist. When visitors came in—Globe-trotters for choice—Trivey used to unmuzzle himself and tell tales that sent the Globe-trotter out of the Club on tiptoe looking for snakes in his hat and tigers in the compound. Whenever a man from a strange Club came in Trivey used to call for a whisky and ginger-wine and rout that man on all points—from horses upward. There was a man whose nickname was 'Ananias,' who came from the Prince's Plungers to look at Trivey; and, though Trivey was only a Civilian, the Plunger man resigned his title to the nickname before eleven o'clock. He made it over to Trivey on a card, and Trivey hung up the certificate in his quarters. We loved Trivey—all of us; and now we don't love him any more.

A man from the Frontier came in and began to tell tales—some very good ones, and some better than good. He was an outsider, but he had a wonderful imagination—for the Frontier. He told six stories before Trivey brought up his first line, and three more before Trivey hurled his reserves into the fray.

‘When I was at Anungaracharlupillay in Madras,’ said Trivey quietly, ‘there was a rogue elephant cutting about the District. And I came upon him asleep.’ All the Club stopped talking here, until Trivey had finished the story. He told us that he, in the company of another man, had found the rogue asleep, but just as they got up to the brute’s head it woke up with a scream. Then Trivey, who was careful to explain that he was ‘a bit powerful about the arms,’ caught hold of its ears as it rose, and hung there, kicking the animal in the eyes, which so bewildered it that it stayed screaming and frightened until Trivey’s ally shot it behind the shoulder, and the villagers ran in and hamstrung it. It evidently died from loss of blood. Trivey was hanging on the ears and kicking hard for nearly fifteen minutes. When the Frontier man heard the story he put his hands in front of his face and sobbed audibly. We gave him all the drinks he wanted, and he recovered sufficiently to carry away eighty rupees at whist later on; but his nerve was irretrievably shattered. He will be no use on the Frontier any more. The rest of the Club were very pleased with Trivey, because these Frontier men, and especially the Guides, want a great deal of keeping in order. Trivey was quite modest. He was a truly great soul, and popular applause never turned his head.

As I have said, we loved Trivey, till that fatal day when Crewe announced that he had been transferred for a couple of months to Anungaracharlupillay. 'Oh!' said Trivey, 'I dare say they'll remember about my rogue elephant down there. You ask 'em, Crewe.' Then we felt sorry for Trivey, because we were sure that he was arriving at that stage of mental decay when a man begins to believe in his own fictions. 'That spoils a man's hand. Crewe wrote up once or twice to Mottleby, saying that he would bring back a story that would make our hair curl. Good stories are scarce in Madras, and we rather scoffed at the announcement. When Crewe returned it was easy to see that he was bursting with importance. He gave a big dinner at the Club and invited nearly everybody but Trivey, who went off after dinner to teach a young subaltern to play snooker. At coffee and cheroots, Crewe could not restrain himself any longer. 'I say, you johnnies, it's all true—every single word of it—and you can throw the decanter at my head and I'll apologise. The whole village was full of it. There *was* a rogue elephant, and it slept, and Trivey *did* catch hold of its ears and kick it in the eyes, and hang on for ten minutes, at least, and all the rest of it. I neglected my regular work to sift that story, and on my honour the tale's an absolute fact. The headman said so, all the *shikaris* said so, and all the villagers corroborated it. Now would a whole village volunteer a lie that would do them no good?'

You might have heard a cigar-ash fall after this statement. Then Mottleby said, with deep disgust: 'What can you do with a man like that? His best and



brightest lie, too !' 'Tisn't,' shrieked Crewe. 'It's a fact—a nickel-plated, teak-wood, Tantalus-action, forty-five-rupee fact.' 'That only makes it worse,' said Mottleby; and we all felt that was true. We ran into the billiard-room to talk to Trivey, but he said we had put him off his stroke; and that was all the satisfaction we got out of him. Later on he repeated that he was 'a bit powerful about the arms,' and went to bed. We sat up half the night devising vengeance on Trivey. We were very angry, and there was no hope of hushing up the tale. The man had taken us in completely, and now that we've lost our champion Ananias, all the Frontier will laugh at us, and we shall never be able to trust a word that Trivey says.

I ask with Mottleby: 'What can you do with a man like that?'

## NEW BROOMS



## NEW BROOMS

'If seven maids with seven mops  
Swept it for half a year,  
Do you suppose,' the Walrus said,  
'That they could get it clear?'

LEWIS CARROLL.

RAM BUKSH, ARYAN, went to bed with his buffalo, five goats, three children, and a wife, because the evening mists were chilly. His hut was builded on the mud scooped from a green and smelly tank, and there were microbes in the thin blood of Ram Buksh.

Ram Buksh went to bed on a charpoy stretched across the blue tepid drain, because the nights were hot; and there were more microbes in his blood. Then the Rains came, and Ram Buksh paddled, mid-thigh deep, in water for a day or two with his buffaloes till he was aware of a crampsome feeling at the pit of his stomach. 'Mother of my children,' said Ram Buksh, 'this is death.' They gave him cardamoms and capsicums, and gingelly-oil and cloves, and they prayed for him. 'It is enough,' said Ram Buksh, and he twisted himself into a knot and died, and they burned him slightly—for the wood was damp—and the rest of him floated down the river, and was caught in an undercurrent at the bank, and there stayed; and when Imam Din, the jeweller, drank of the stream five days later, he drank Lethe, and passed away, crying in vain upon his Gods.

His family did not report his death to the Municipality, for they desired to keep Imam Din with them. Therefore, they buried him under the flagging in the courtyard, secretly and by night. Twelve days later, Imam Din had made connection with the well of the house, and there was typhus among the women in the zenana, but no one knew anything about it—some died and some did not; and Ari Booj, the *fakir*, added to the interest of the proceedings by joining the funeral procession and distributing gratis the more malignant forms of smallpox, from which he was just recovering. He had come all the way from Delhi, and had slept on no less than fifteen different charpoys; and that was how they got the smallpox into Bahadurgarh. But Eshmith Sahib's *dhobi* picked it up from Ari Booj when Imam Din's wife was being buried—for he was a merry man, and sent home a beautiful sample among the Sunday shirts. So Eshmith Sahib died.

He was only a link in the chain which crawled from the highest to the lowest. The wonder was not that men died like sheep, but that they did not die like flies; for their lives and their surroundings, their deaths, were part of a huge conspiracy against cleanliness. And the people loved to have it so. They huddled together in frowzy clusters, while Death mowed his way through them till the scythe blunted against the unresisting flesh, and he had to get a new one. They died by fever, tens of thousands in a month; they died of cholera, a thousand in a week; they died of smallpox, scores in the *mohulla*, and by dysentery by tens in a house; and when all other deaths failed they laid

them down and died because their hands were too weak to hold on to life.

To and fro stamped the Englishman, who is everlastingly at war with the Scheme of Things. 'You shall not die,' he said, and he decreed that there should be no more famines. He poured grain down their throats, and when all failed he went down into the strife and died with them, swearing, and toiling, and working till the last. He fought the famine and put it to flight. Then he wiped his forehead, and attacked the pestilence that walketh in the darkness. Death's scythe swept to and fro, around and about him; but he only planted his feet more firmly in the way of it, and fought off Death with a dog-whip. 'Live, you ruffian!' said the Englishman to Ram Buksh as he rode through the reeking village. '*Jenab!* [my lord!]' said Ram Buksh, 'it is as it was in the days of our fathers!' 'Then stand back while I alter it,' said the Englishman; and by force, and cunning, and a brutal disregard of vested interests, he strove to keep Ram Buksh alive. 'Clean your *mohullas*; pay for clean water; keep your streets swept; and see that your food is sound, or I'll make your life a burden to you,' said the Englishman. Sometimes he died; but more often Ram Buksh went down, and the Englishman regarded each death as a personal insult.

'Softly, there!' said the Government of India. 'You're twisting his tail. You mustn't do that. The spread of education forbids, and Ram Buksh is an intelligent voter. Let him work out his own salvation.'

'H'm!' said the Englishman with his head in a midden. 'Collectively you always were a fool. Here,

Ram Buksh, the Sirkar says you are to do all these things for yourself.'

'*Jenab!*' said Ram Buksh, and fell to breeding microbes with renewed vigour.

Curiously enough, it was in the centres of enlightenment that he prosecuted his experiments most energetically. The education had been spread, but so thinly that it could not disguise Ram Buksh's natural instincts. He created an African village, and said it was the hub of the universe, and all the dirt of all the roads failed to convince him that he was not the most advanced person in the world. There was a pause, and Ram Buksh got himself fearfully entangled among Boards and Committees, but he valued them as a bower-bird values shells and red rags. 'See!' said the Englishman to the Government of India, 'he is blind on that side—blind by birth, training, instinct, and associations. Five-sixths of him is poor stock raised off poor soil, and he'll die on the least provocation. You've no right to let him kill himself.'

'But he's educated,' said the Government of India.

'I'll concede everything,' said the Englishman. 'He's a statesman, author, poet, politician, artist, and all else that you wish him to be, but he isn't a Sanitary Engineer. And while you're training him he is dying. Goodness knows my share in the Government is very limited nowadays, but I'm willing to do all the work while he gets all the credit if you'll only let me have some authority over him in his mud-pie making.'

'But the Liberty of the Subject is sacred,' said the Government of India.

'I haven't any,' said the Englishman. 'He can trail

through my compounds; start shrines in the public roads; poison my family; have me into the courts for nothing; ruin my character; spend my money, and call me an assassin when all is done. *I don't object. Let me look after his sanitation.*'

'But the days of a paternal Government are over; we must depend on the people. Think of what they would say at Home,' said the Government of India. 'We have issued a Resolution—indeed we have!'

The Englishman sat down and groaned. 'I believe you'll issue a Resolution some day notifying your own abolition,' said he. 'What are you going to do?'

'Constitute more Boards,' said the Government of India. 'Boards of Control and Supervision—Fund Boards—all sorts of Boards. Nothing like system. It will be at work in three years or so. We haven't any money, but that's a detail.'

The Englishman looked at the Resolution and sniffed. 'It doesn't touch the weak point of the country.'

'What *will* touch the weak point of the country, then?' said the Government of India.

'I used to,' said the Englishman. 'I was the District Officer, and I twisted their tails. You have taken away my power, and now——'

'Well,' said the Government of India, 'you seem to think a good deal of yourself.'

'Never mind me,' said the Englishman. 'I'm an effete relic of the past. But Ram Buksh will die, as he used to do.'

And now we all wait to see which is right.





## TIGLATH PILESER



## TIGLATH PILESER

**T**HANK HEAVEN he is dead! The Municipality sent a cart and a man only this morning, and, all the servants aiding with ropes and tackle, the carcass of Tiglath was borne away—a wobbling lump. His head was thrust over the tailboard of the cart. Upon it was stamped an expression of horror and surprise, unutterable and grotesque. I have put away my rifle, I have cheered my heart with wine, and I sit down now to write the story of Tiglath, the Utter Brute. His own kind, alas! will not read it, and thus will be shorn of instruction; but owners will kindly take notice, and when it pleases Heaven to inflict them with such an animal as Tiglath they will know what to do.

To begin with, I bought him, his vices thick as his *barsati* [an eruptive disease prevalent in wet weather among horses], for a hundred and seventy rupees, a five-chambered, muzzle-loading revolver, and a Cawnpore saddle.

‘Of course, at that price,’ said Staveley, ‘you can’t expect everything. He’s not what one would call absolutely sound, y’know, but there’s no end of work in him, and if you only give him the butt he’ll go like a steam-engine.’

‘Staveley,’ I answered, ‘when you admit that he is not perfection I perceive that I am in for a really Good Thing. Don’t hurt your conscience, Staveley. Tell me what is his chief vice—weakness, partiality—anything you choose to call it. I shall get to know

the minor defects in the course of nature; but what is Tiglath's real *shouk* [strong point]?'

Staveley reflected a moment. 'Well, really, I can't quite say, old man, straight off the reel, y'know. He's a oner to go when his head's turned to home. He's a regular feeder, and vaseline will cure that little eruption'—it was malignant *barsati*—'in no time. Oh, I forgot his *shouk*. I don't know exactly how to describe it, but he yaws a good deal,' said Staveley.

'He how muches?' I asked.

'Yaws,' said Staveley; 'goes a bit wide upon occasions, but a good *coachwan* will cure that in one drive. My man let him do what he liked. One fifty and a hundred, ten and ten is twenty—one-seventy. Many thanks, indeed. I'll send over his bedding and ropes. He's a powerful upstanding horse, though rather tucked up just at present.'

Staveley departed, and I was left alone with Tiglath. I called him Tiglath because he resembled a lathy pig. Later on I called him Pilesar on account of his *shouk*; but my *coachwan*, a strong, masterless man, called him '*haramzada chor, shaitan ké bap*' and '*oont ki beta*' [base-born, thief, father of the Devil, and child of a camel]. He certainly was a powerful horse, being full fifteen-two at the withers, with the girth of a Waler, and at first the docility of an Arab. There was something wrong with his feet—permanently—but he was a considerate beast, and never had more than one leg in hospital at a time. The other three were still movable, and Tiglath never grudged them in my service. I write this in justice to his memory; the creaking of the wheels of the Municipal cart being still in my ears.

For a season—some twelve days—Tiglath was beyond reproach. He had not a cheerful disposition, nor did his pendulous underlip add to his personal beauty; but he made no complaints, and moved swiftly to and from office. The hot weather gave place to the cool breezes of October, and with the turn of the year the slumbering devil in the soul of Tiglath spread its wings and crowed aloud. I fed him well, I had aided his *barsati*, I had lapped his lame legs in *thanda puttees* [cold bandages], and adorned his sinful body with new harness. He rewarded me upon a day with an exhibition so new and strange that I feared for the moment his reason had been unhinged. Slowly, with a malevolent grin, Tiglath, the pampered, turned at right angles to the carriage—a newly varnished one—and backed the front wheels up the veranda steps, letting them down with a bump. He then wheeled round and round in the portico, and all but brought the carriage over. The show lasted for ten minutes, at the end of which time he trotted peacefully away.

I was pained and grieved—nothing more, upon my honour. I forbade the groom to kick Tiglath in the stomach, for I was persuaded that the harness galled him, and, in this belief, at the end of the day, undressed him tenderly and fitted sheepskin all over the said harness. Tiglath ate the sheepskin next day, and I did not renew it.

A week later I met the Judge. It was a purely accidental interview. I would have avoided it, as the Judge and I did not love each other, but the shafts of my carriage were through the circular front of his brougham, and Tiglath was rubbing the boss of his

headstall tenderly against the newly varnished panels of the same. The Judge complained that he might have been impaled as he sat. My *coachwan* declared on oath that the horse deliberately ran into the brougham. Tiglath tendered no evidence, and I began to mistrust him.

At the end of a month I perceived that my friends and acquaintances avoided me markedly. The appearance of Tiglath at the band-stand was enough to clear a space of ten yards in my immediate neighbourhood. I had to shout to my friends from afar, and they shouted back the details of the little bills which I had to pay their coach-builders. Tiglath was suffering from carriagecidal mania, and the *coachwan* had asked for leave. 'Stay with me, Ibrahim,' I said. 'Thou seest how the Sahib-log do now avoid us. Get a new and stout whip and instruct Tiglath in the paths of straight walking.'

'He will smash the Heaven-born's carriage. He is an old and stale devil, but in this matter extreme wise,' answered Ibrahim. 'Kitto Sahib's phaeton hath he smashed, and Burkitt Sahib's brougham, and another *tum-tum* [two-wheeled cart], and Staveley Sahib's carriage is still being mended. What profit is this horse? He feigns blindness and much fear, and in the guise of innocency works evil. I will stay, Sahib, but the blood of this thy new carriage be upon the brute's head and not upon mine own.'

I have no space to describe the war of the next few weeks. Foiled in his desire to ruin only neighbours' property, Tiglath fell back literally, upon his own—my carriage. He tried the veranda-step trick till he bent

the springs, and wheeled round till the turning action grew red-hot; he scraped stealthily by walls; he performed between heavy-laden bullock-trains, but his chief delight was a *pas de fantaisie* on a dark night and a high-level road. Yet what he did he did staidly and without heat, as without remorse. He was vetted thrice, and his eyes were pronounced sound. After this information I laid my bones to the battle, and acquired a desperate facility in leaping from the carriage and kicking Tiglath in the stomach as soon as he wheeled around; leaping back at the risk of my life when he set off at full speed. I pressed the lighted end of a cheroot just behind the collar-buckle; I applied fusees to those flaccid nostrils, and I beat him about the head with a stick continually. It was necessary, but it was also demoralising. A year of Tiglath would have converted me into a cold-blooded vivisectionist, or a native bullock-driver. Each day I took stock of the injuries to my carriage. I had long since given up all hope of keeping it in decent repair; and each day I devised fresh torments for Tiglath.

He never meant to injure himself, I am certain, and no one was more astonished than he when he backed on the Balumon road, and dropped the carriage into a ditch on the night of the Jamabundi Moguls' dance. I did not go to the dance. I was bent considerably, and one side of the *coachman's* face was flayed. When he had pieced the wreck together, he only said, 'Sahib?' and I said only '*Bahut achcha* [Very good].' But we each knew what the other meant. Next morn Tiglath was stiff and strained. I gave him time to recover and enjoy life. When I heard him squealing to the grass-



cutter's ponies I knew that the hour had come. I ordered the carriage, and myself superintended the funeral toilet of Tiglath. His harness brasses shone like gold, his coat like a bottle, and he lifted his feet daintily. Had he even then, at the eleventh hour, given promise of amendment, I should have held my hand. But as I entered the carriage I saw the hunching of his quarters that presaged trouble. 'Go forward, Tiglath, my love, my pride, my delight,' I murmured. 'For a surety it is a matter of life and death to thee this day.' The groom ran to his head with a fragment of bread, saved from his all too scanty rations; for the man loved him. And Tiglath swung round to the left in the portico; round and round swung he, till the near eye touched the muzzle of the shot-gun that waited its coming. He never flinched; he pressed on his fate. The *coachman* threw down the reins as, with four ounces of No. 5 shot behind the hollow of the root of the ear, Tiglath fell. In his death he accomplished the desire of his life, for he fell upon the shaft and broke it into three pieces. I looked on him as he lay, and of a sudden the reason of the horror in his eyes was made clear. Tiglath, the breaker of carriages, the strong, the rebellious, had passed into the shadowy spirit land, where there was nought to destroy and no power to destroy it with. The ghastly fore-knowledge of the flitting soul was written on the glazing eyeball.

I repented me, then, that I had slain Tiglath, for I had no intention of punishing him in the Hereafter.

## THE LIKES O' US



## THE LIKES O' US

IT WAS THE GENERAL OFFICER COMMANDING, riding down the Mall, on the Arab with the perky tail, and he condescended to explain some of the mysteries of his profession. But the point on which he dwelt most pompously was the ease with which the Private Thomas Atkins could be 'handled,' as he called it. 'Only feed him and give him a little work to do, and you can do anything with him,' said the General Officer Commanding. 'There's no refinement about Tommy, you know; and one is very like another. They've all the same ideas and traditions and prejudices. They're all big children. Fancy any man in his senses shooting about these hills!' There was the report of a shot-gun in the valley. 'I suppose they've hit a dog. Happy as the day is long when they're out shooting dogs. Just like a big child is Tommy.' He touched up his horse and cantered away. There was a sound of angry voices down the hillside.

'All right, you *soor* [swine]—I won't never forget this—mind you, not as long as I live, and s' 'elp me—I'll——' The sentence finished in what could be represented by a blaze of asterisks.

A deeper voice cut it short: 'Oh, no, you won't, neither! Look a-here, you young smitcher. If I was to take yer up now, and knock off your 'ead again' that tree, could ye say anythin'? No, nor yet do anythin'. If I was to—Ah! you would, would you? There!' Some one had evidently sat down with a thud, and was swearing nobly. I slid over the edge of the hill,

down through the long grass, and fetched up, after the manner of a sledge, with my feet in the broad of the back of Gunner Barnabas in the Mountain Battery, my friend, the very strong man. He was sitting upon a man—a khaki-coloured volcano of blasphemy—and was preparing to smoke. My sudden arrival threw him off his balance for a moment. Then, readjusting his chair, he bade me good-day.

‘Im an’ me ’ave bin ’avin’ an arg’ment,’ said Gunner Barnabas placidly. ‘I was going for to half kill an’ ’eave ’im into the bushes ’ere, but, seein’ that you ’ave come, sir, and very welcome when you *do* come, we will ’ave a court-martial instead. Shacklock, are you willin’?’ The volcano, who had been swearing uninterruptedly through this oration, expressed a desire, in general and particular terms, to see Gunner Barnabas in torment and the ‘civilian’ on the next gridiron.

Private Shacklock was a tow-haired, scrofulous boy of about two-and-twenty. His nose was bleeding profusely, and the live air attested that he had been drinking quite as much as was good for him. He lay, stomach down, on a little level spot on the hillside; for Gunner Barnabas was sitting between his shoulder-blades, and his was not a weight to wriggle under. Private Shacklock could barely draw breath to swear, but he did the best that in him lay. ‘Amen,’ said Gunner Barnabas piously, when an unusually brilliant string of oaths came to an end. ‘Seein’ that this gentleman ’ere has never seen the inside o’ the ’orsepitals you’ve gotten in, and the Clinks you’ve bin chucked into like a hay-bundle, *per-haps*, Privit Shacklock, you will stop. You are a-makin’ of ’im

sick.' Private Shacklock said that he was pleased to hear it, and would have continued his speech, but his breath suddenly went from him, and the unfinished curse died out in a gasp. Gunner Barnabas had put up one of his huge feet. 'There's just enough room now for you to breathe, Shacklock,' said he, 'an' not enough for you to try to interrupt the conversation I'm a-havin' with this gentleman. *Choop!* [Be quiet!]' Turning to me, Gunner Barnabas pulled at his pipe, but showed no hurry to open the 'conversation.' I felt embarrassed, for, after all, the thus strangely unearthed difference between the Gunner and the Line man was no affair of mine. 'Don't you go,' said Gunner Barnabas. He had evidently been deeply moved by something. He dropped his head between his fists and looked steadily at me.

'I met this child 'ere,' said he, 'at Deelally—a fish-backed recruity as ever was. I knowed 'im at Deelally, and I give 'im a latherin' at Deelally all for to keep 'im straight, 'im bein' such as wants a latherin' an' knowin' nothin' o' the ways o' this country. Then I meets 'im up here, a butterfly-huntin' as innocent as you please—convalescin'. I goes out with 'im butterfly-huntin', and, as you see 'ere, a-shootin'. The gun betwixt us.' I saw then, what I had overlooked before, a Company fowling-piece lying among some boulders far down the hill. Gunner Barnabas continued: 'I should ha' seen where he had a-bin to get that drink inside o' 'im. Presently, 'e misses summat. "You're a bloomin' fool," sez I. "If that had bin a Paythan, now!" I sez. "Damn your Paythans, an' you too," sez 'e. "I strook it." "You did

not," I sez. "I saw the bark fly." "Stick to your bloomin' pop-guns," sez 'e, "an' don't talk to a better man than you." I laughed there, knowin' what I was an' what 'e was. "You laugh?" sez he. "I laugh," I sez, "Shacklock, an' for what should I not laugh?" sez I. "Then go an' laugh in Hell," sez 'e, "for I'll 'ave none of your laughin'." With that 'e brings up the gun yonder and looses off at me, and I stretches 'im there and guv him a little to keep 'im quiet, and puts 'im under, an' while I was thinkin' over what nex', you comes down the 'ill, an' finds us as we was.'

The Private was the Gunner's prey—I knew that the affair had fallen as the Gunner had said, for my friend is constitutionally incapable of lying—and I recognised that in his hands lay the boy's fate.

'What do *you* think?' said Gunner Barnabas, after a silence broken only by the convulsive breathing of the boy he was sitting on. 'I think nothing,' I said. 'He didn't go for me. He's your property.' Then an idea occurred to me. 'Hand him over to his own Company. They'll school him half dead.' 'Got no Comp'ny,' said Gunner Barnabas. 'E's a conv'lescent draft—all sixes an' sevens. Don't matter to them what he did.' 'Thrash him yourself, then,' I said. Gunner Barnabas looked at the man and smiled; then caught up an arm, as a mother takes up the dimpled arm of a child, and ran the sleeve and shirt up to the elbow. 'Look at that!' he said. It was a pitiful arm, lean and muscleless. 'Can you mill a man with an arm like that—such as I would like to mill him, an' such as he deserves? I tell you, sir, an' I am not smokin' [swag-gering], as you see—I could take that man—sodger 'e

is, Lord help 'im!—an' twis' off 'is arms an' 'is legs as if 'e was a naked crab. See here!

Before I could realise what was going to happen, Gunner Barnabas rose up, stooped, and taking the wretched Private Shacklock by two points of grasp, heaved him up above his head. The boy kicked once or twice, and then was still. He was very white. 'I could now,' said Gunner Barnabas, 'I could now chuck this man where I like. Chuck him like a lump o' beef, an' it would not be too much for him if I chucked. Can I thrash such a man with both 'ands? No, no, yet with my right 'and tied behind my back, an' my left in a sling.'

He dropped Private Shacklock on the ground and sat upon him as before. The boy groaned as the weight settled, but there was a look in his white-lashed, red eyes that was not pleasant.

'I do not know *what* I will do,' said Gunner Barnabas, rocking himself to and fro. 'I know 'is breed, an' the way o' the likes o' them. If I was in 'is Company, an' this 'ad 'appened, an' I 'ad strook 'im, as I *would* ha' strook him, 'twould ha' all passed off an' bin forgot till the drink was in 'im again—a month, maybe, or six, maybe. An' when the drink was frizzin' in 'is 'ead he would up and loose off in the night or the day or the evenin'. *All acause of that millin' that 'e would ha' forgotten in between.* Then I would be dead—killed by the likes o' 'im, an' me the nex' strongest man but three in the British Army!'

Private Shacklock, not so hardly pressed as he had been, found breath to say that if he could only get hold of the fowling-piece again the strongest man but three



in the British Army would be seriously crippled for the rest of his days. 'Hear that!' said Gunner Barnabas, sitting heavily to silence his chair. 'Hear that, you that think things is funny to put into the papers! He would shoot me, 'e would, now; an' so long as he's drunk, or comin' out o' the drink, 'e will want to shoot me. Look a-here!'

He turned the boy's head sideways, his hand round the nape of the neck, his thumb touching the angle of the jaw. 'What do you call those marks?' They were the white scars of scrofula, with which Shacklock was eaten up. I told Gunner Barnabas this. 'I don't know what that means. I call 'em murder-marks an' signs. If a man 'as these things on 'im, an' drinks, so long as 'e's drunk, 'e's mad—a looney. *But* that doesn't 'elp if 'e kills you. Look a-here, an' here!' The marks were thick on the jaw and neck. 'Stubbs 'ad 'em,' said Gunner Barnabas to himself, 'an' Lancy 'ad 'em, an' Duggard 'ad 'em, an' what's come to *them*? *You*'ve got 'em,' he said, addressing himself to the man he was handling like a roped calf, 'an' sooner or later you'll go with the rest of 'em. But this time I will not do anything—exceptin' keep you here till the drink's dead in you.'

Gunner Barnabas resettled himself and continued: 'Twice this afternoon, Shacklock, you 'ave bin so near dyin' that I know no man more so. Once was when I stretched you, an' might ha' wiped off your face with my boot as you was lyin'; an' once was when I lifted you up in my fists. Was you afraid, Shacklock?'

'I were,' murmured the half-stifled soldier.

'An' once more I will show you how near you can go to Kingdom Come in my 'ands.' He knelt by Shacklock's side, the boy lying still as death. 'If I was to hit you here,' said he, 'I would break your chest, an' you would die. If I was to put my 'and here, an' my other 'and here, I would twis' your neck, an' you would die, Privit Shacklock. If I was to put my knees here an' put your 'ead so, I would pull off your 'ead, Privit Shacklock, an' you would die. If you think as how I am a liar, say so, an' I'll show you. Do you think so?'

'No,' whispered Private Shacklock, not daring to move a muscle, for Barnabas's hand was on his neck.

'Now, remember,' went on Barnabas, 'neither you will say nothing nor I will say nothing o' what has happened. I ha' put you to shame before me an' this gentleman here, an' that is enough. But I tell you, an' you give 'eed now, it would be better for you to desert than to go on a-servin' where you are now. If I meets you again—if my Batt'ry lays with your Reg'ment, an' Privit Shacklock is on the rolls, I will first mill you myself till you can't see, and then I will say why I strook you. You must go, an' look bloomin' slippy about it, for if you stay, so sure as God made Paythans an' we've got to wipe 'em out, you'll be loosing off o' unauthorised amminition—in or out o' barricks, an' you'll be 'anged for it. I know your breed, an' I know what these 'ere white marks mean. You're mad, Shacklock, that's all—and here you stay, under me. An' now *choop*, an' lie still.'

I waited and smoked, and Gunner Barnabas smoked till the shadows lengthened on the hillside, and a chilly

wind began to blow. At dusk Gunner Barnabas rose and looked at his captive. 'Drink's out o' 'im now,' he said.

'I can't move,' whimpered Shacklock. 'I've got the fever back again.'

'I'll carry you,' said Gunner Barnabas, swinging him up and preparing to climb the hill. 'Good-night, sir,' he said to me. 'It looks pretty, doesn't it? But never you forget, an' I won't forget neither, that this 'ere shiverin', shakin', convalescent a-hangin' on to my neck is a ragin', tearin' devil when 'e's lushy—an' him a boy!'

He strode up the hill with his burden, but just before he disappeared he turned round and shouted: 'It's the likes o' 'im brings shame on the likes o' us. 'Tain't we ourselves, s' 'elp me Gawd, 'tain't!'

## HIS BROTHER'S KEEPER



## HIS BROTHER'S KEEPER

‘W<sup>HIST?</sup>

‘Can’t make up a four.’

‘Poker, then?’

“‘Never again with you, Robin.’ ’Tisn’t good enough, old man.’

‘Seeking what he may devour,’ murmured a third voice from behind a newspaper. ‘Stop the pu-ikah, and make him go away.’

‘Don’t talk of it on a night like this. It’s enough to give a man fits. You’ve no enterprise. Here I’ve aken the trouble to come over after dinner——’

‘On the off-chance of skinning some one. I don’t believe you ever crossed a horse for pleasure.’

‘That’s true, I never did—and there are only two johnnies in the Club.’

‘They’ve all gone off to the theatre.’

‘Wah! Wah! They must be pretty hard up for amusement. Help me to a split.’

‘Split in this weather! Hi, bearer, *do burra—burra* whisky-peg *lao*, and just put all the *barf* into them that you can find. [Bring two big whiskies and sodas with plenty of ice.]’

The newspaper came down with a rustle, as the reader said:

‘How the deuce d’you expect a man to improve his mind when you two are *bukking* about drinks? *Qui hai? Mera wasti bhi.* [Who’s there? Bring one for me too.]’

‘Oh! you’re alive, are you? I thought pegs would fetch you out of that. Game for a little poker?’

'Poker—poker—*red-hot* poker! Saveloy, you're too generous. Can't you let a man die in peace?'

'Who's going to die?'

'I am, please the pigs, if it gets much hotter and that bearer doesn't bring the peg quickly.'

'All right. Die away, *mon ami*. Only don't do it in the Club, that's all. Can't have it littered up with dead members. Houligan would object.'

'By Jove! I think I can imagine old Houligan doing it. "Member dead in the ante-room? Good Gud! Bless my soul! Impossible to run a Club this way. Call the Babu and see if his last month's bill is paid. Not paid! Good Gud! Bless my soul! Impossible to run a Club this way. Babu, attach that body till the bill is paid." Revel, you might just hurry up your dying once in a way to give us the pleasure of seeing Houligan perform.'

'I'll die legitimately,' said Revel. 'I'm not going to create a fresh scandal in the station. I'll wait for heat-apoplexy, or whatever is going, to come and fetch me.'

'This is *pukka* [genuine] hot-weather talk,' said Saveloy. 'I come over for a little honest poker, and find two moderately sensible men, Revel and Dallston, talking tombs. I'm sorry I've thrown away my valuable evening.'

'D'you expect us to talk about buttercups and daisies, then?' said Dallston.

'No, but there's some sort of medium between those and Sudden Death.'

'There isn't. I haven't seen a daisy for seven years, and now I want to die,' said Revel, plunging luxuriously into his peg.

## HIS BROTHER'S KEEPER

'I knew a johnny on the Frontier once who *did*,' began Dallston meditatively.

'Half a minute. Bearer, bring a cheroot. Tobacco soothes the nerves when a man is expecting to hear a whacker. We know what your Frontier stories are, Martha.'

Dallston had once, in a misguided moment, taken the part of Martha in the burlesque of *Faust*, and the nickname stuck.

'Tisn't a whacker, it's a fact. He told me so himself.'

'They always do, Martha. I've noticed that be'ore. But what did he tell you?'

'He told me that he had died.'

'Was *that* all? Explain him.'

'It was this way. The man went down with a bad go of fever and was off his head. About the second day it struck him in the middle of the night.'

'Steady the Buffs! Martha, you aren't an Irishman yet.'

'Never mind. It's too hot to put it correctly. In the middle of the night he woke up quite calm, and it struck him that it would be a good thing to die—just as it might ha' struck him that it would be a good thing to put ice on his head. He lay on his bed and thought it over, and the more he thought about it, the better sort of *bundobust* [arrangement] it seemed to be. He was quite calm, you know, and he said that he could have sworn that he had no fever on him.'

'Well, what happened?'

'Oh, he got up and loaded his revolver—he remem-



bers all this—and let fly, with the muzzle to his temple. The thing didn't go off, so he turned it up and found he'd forgot to load one chamber.'

'Better stop the tale there. We can guess what's coming.'

'Hang it! It's a true yarn. Well, he jammed the thing to his head again, and it missed fire, and he said that he felt ready to cry with rage, he was so disgusted. So he took it by the muzzle and hit himself on the head with it.'

'Good man! Didn't it go off *then*?'

'No, but the blow knocked him silly, and he thought he was dead. He was awfully pleased, for he had been fiddling over the show for nearly half an hour. He dropped down and died. When he got his wits again, he was shaking with the fever worse than ever, but he had sense enough to go and knock up the doctor and give himself into his charge as a lunatic. Then he went clean off his head till the fever wore out.'

'That's a good story,' said Revel critically. 'I didn't think you had it in you at this season of the year.'

'I can believe it,' said the man they called Saveloy. 'Fever makes one do all sorts of queer things. I suppose your friend was mad with it when he discovered it would be so healthy to die.'

'S'pose so. The fever must have been so bad that he felt all right—same way that a man who is nearly mad with drink gets to look sober. Well, anyhow, there was a man who died.'

'Did he tell you what it felt like?'

'He said that he was awfully happy until his fever

came back and shook him up. Then he was sick with fear. I don't wonder. He'd had rather a narrow escape.'

'That's nothing,' said Saveloy. 'I know a man who lived.'

'So do I,' said Revel. 'Lots of 'em, confound 'em.'

'Now, this takes Martha's story, and it's quite true.'

'They always are,' said Martha. 'I've noticed that before.'

'Never mind, I'll forgive you. But this happened to me. Since you *are* talking tombs, I'll assist at the séance. It was in '82 or '83, I have forgotten which. Anyhow, it was when I was on the Utamamula Canal Headworks, and I was chumming with a man called Stovey. You've never met him because he belongs to the Bombay side; if he isn't really dead by this he ought to be somewhere there now. He was a *pukka* sweep, and I hated him. We divided the Canal bungalow between us, and we kept strictly to our own side of the buildings.'

'Hold on! I call. What was Stovey to look at?' said Revel.

'Living picture of the King of Spades—a blackish, greasy sort of ruffian who hadn't any pretence of manners or form. He used to dine in the kit he had been messing about the Canal in all day, and I don't believe he ever washed. He had the embankments to look after, and I was in charge of the headworks, but he was always contriving to fall foul of me if he possibly could.'

'I know that sort of man. Mullane of Ghoridasah's built that way.'

'Don't know Mullane, but Stovey was a sweep. Canal work isn't exactly cheering, and it doesn't take you into *much* society. We were like a couple of rats in a burrow, grubbing and scooping all day and turning in at night into the barn of a bungalow. Well, this man Stovey didn't get fever. He was so coated with dirt that I don't believe the fever could have got at him. He just began to go mad.'

'Cheerful! What were the symptoms?'

'Well, his naturally vile temper grew infamous. It was really unsafe to speak to him; and he always seemed anxious to murder a coolie or two. With me, of course, he restrained himself a little, but he sulked like a bear for days and days together. As he was the only European society within sixty miles, you can imagine how nice it was for me. He'd sit at table and sulk and stare at the opposite wall by the hour—instead of doing his work. When I pointed out that the Government didn't send us into these cheerful places to twiddle our thumbs, he glared like a beast. Oh, he was a thorough hog! He had a lot of other endearing tricks, but the worst was when he began to pray.'

'Began to—how much?'

'Pray. He'd got hold of an old copy of the *War Cry* and used to read it at meals; and I suppose that that, on the top of tough goat, disordered his intellect. One night I heard him in his room groaning and talking at a fearful rate. Next morning I asked him if he'd been taken worse. "I've been engaged in prayer," he said, looking as black as thunder. "A man's spiritual concerns are his own property." One night—he'd kept up these spiritual exercises for about ten days, growing queerer

## HIS BROTHER'S KEEPER

and queerer every day—he said “Good night” after dinner, and got up and shook hands with me.’

‘Bad sign, that,’ said Revel, sucking industriously at his cheroot.

‘At first I couldn’t make out what the man wanted. No fellow shakes hands with a fellow he’s living with—least of all such a beast as Stovey. However, I was civil, but the minute after he’d left the room it struck me what he was going to do. If he hadn’t shaken hands I’d have taken no notice, I suppose. This unusual effusion put me on my guard.’

‘Curious thing! You can nearly always tell when a johnny means pegging out. He gives himself away by some softening. It’s human nature. What did you do?’

‘Called him back, and asked him what the this and that he meant by interfering with my coolies in the day. He was generally hampering my men, but I had never taken any notice of his vagaries till then. In another minute, we were arguing away, hammer and tongs. If it had been any other man I’d ’a’ simply thrown the lamp at his head. He was calling me all the names under the sun, accusing me of misusing my authority and goodness only knows what all. When he had talked himself down one stretch, I had only to say a few words to start him off again, as fresh as a daisy. On my word, this jabbering went on for nearly three hours.’

‘Why didn’t you get coolies and have him tied up, if you thought he was mad?’ asked Revel.

‘Not a safe business, believe me. Wrongful restraint, on your own responsibility, of a man nearly your own standing looks ugly. Well, Stovey went on bullying

me and complaining about everything I'd ever said or done since I came on the Canal, till—he went fast asleep.'

'Wha-at?'

'Went off fast asleep, just as if he'd been drugged. I thought the brute had had a fit at first, but there he was with his head hanging a little on one side and his mouth open. I knocked up his bearer and told him to take the man to bed. We carried him off and shoved him on his charpoy. He was still asleep, and I didn't think it worth while to undress him. The fit, whatever it was, had worked itself out, and he was limp and used up. But as I was going to leave the room, and went to turn the lamp down, I looked in the glass and saw that he was watching me between his eyelids. When I spun round he seemed asleep. "That's your game, is it?" I thought, and I stood over him long enough to see that he was shamming. Then I cast an eye round the room and saw his Martini in the corner. We were all Volunteers on the Canal works. I couldn't find the cartridges, so to make all serene I knocked the breech-pin out with the cleaning-rod and went to my own room. I didn't go to sleep for some time. About one o'clock—our rooms were only divided by a door of sorts, and my bed was close to it—I heard my friend open a chest of drawers. Then he went for the Martini. Of course, the breech-block came out with a rattle. Then he went back to bed again, and I nearly laughed.

'Next morning he was doing the genial, hail-fellow-well-met trick. Said he was afraid he'd lost his temper overnight, and apologised for it. About half

way through breakfast—he was talking thickly about everything and anything—he said he'd come to the conclusion that a beard was a beastly nuisance and made one stuffy. He was going to shave his. Would I lend him my razors? "Oh, you're a crafty beast, you are," I said to myself. I told him that I was of the other opinion, and finding my razors nearly worn out had chucked them into the Canal only the night before. He gave me one look under his eyebrows and went on with his breakfast. I was in a stew lest the man should cut his throat with one of the breakfast knives, so I kept one eye on him most of the time.

'Before I left the bungalow I caught old Jeehun Singh, one of the *mistris* [carpenters] on the gates and gave him strict orders that he was to keep in sight of the Sahib wherever he went and whatever he did; and if he did or tried to do anything foolish, such as jumping down the well, Jeehun Singh was to stop him. The old man tumbled at once, and I was easier in my mind when I saw how he was shadowing Stovey up and down the works. Then I sat down and wrote a letter to old Baggs, the Civil Surgeon at Chemanghath, about sixty miles off, telling him how we stood. The runner left about three o'clock. Jeehun Singh turned up at the end of the day and gave a full, true, and particular account of Stovey's doings. D'you know what the brute had done?'

'Spare us the agony. Kill him straight off, Saveloy!'

'He'd stopped the runner, opened the bag, read my letter and torn it up! There were only two letters in the bag, both of which I'd written. I was pretty average angry, but I lay low. At dinner he said he'd

got a touch of dysentery and wanted some chlorodyne. For a man anxious to depart this life he was about as badly equipped as you could wish. Hadn't even a medicine-chest to play with. He was no more suffering from dysentery than I, but I said I'd give him the chlorodyne, and so I did—fifteen drops, mixed in a wine-glass, and when he asked for the bottle I said that I hadn't any more.

'That night he began praying again, and I just lay in bed and shuddered. He was invoking the most blasphemous curses on my head—all in a whisper, for fear of waking me up—for frustrating what he called his "great and holy purpose." You never heard anything like it. But as long as he was praying I knew he was alive, and he ran his praying half through the night.

'Well, for the next ten days he was apparently quite rational; but I watched him and told Jeewun Singh to watch him like a cat. I suppose he wanted to throw me off my guard, but I wasn't to be thrown. I grew thin watching him. Baggs wrote in to say he had gone on tour and couldn't be found anywhere in particular for another six weeks. It was a ghastly time.

'One day old Jeewun Singh turned up with a bit of paper that Stovey had given to one of the *lohars* [iron-workers] as a *naksha* [pattern]. I thought it was mean work spying into another man's very plans, but when I saw what was on the paper I gave old Jeewun Singh a rupee. It was a be-eautiful little breech-pin. The one-ideaed idiot had gone back to the Martini! I never dreamt of such persistence. "Tell me when the *lohar* gives it to the Sahib," I said, and I felt more comfy for

a few days. Even if Jeewun Singh hadn't split I should have known when the new breech-pin was made. The brute came in to dinner with a dashed confident, triumphant air, as if he'd done me in the eye at last; and all through dinner he was fiddling in his waist-coat-pocket. He went to bed early. I went, too, and I put my head against the door and listened like a woman. I must have been shivering in my pyjamas for about two hours before my friend went for the dismantled Martini. He could not get the breech-pin to fit at first. He rummaged about, and then I heard a file at work. That seemed to make too much noise to suit his fancy, so he opened the door and went out into the compound, and I heard him, about fifty yards off, filing in the dark at that breech-pin as if he had been possessed. Well, he *was*, you know. Then he came back to the light, cursing me for keeping him out of his rest and the peace of Abraham's bosom. As soon as I heard him taking up the Martini, I ran round to his door and tried to enter gaily, as the stage directions say. "Lend me your gun, old man, if you're awake," I said. "There's a howling big brute of a pariah in my room, and I want to get a shot at it." I pretended not to notice that he was standing over the gun, but just pranced up and caught hold of it. He turned round with a jump and said: "I'm sick of this. I'll see that dog, and if it's another of your lies I'll——" You know I'm not a moral man.'

'Hear! hear!' drowsily from Martha.

'But I simply daren't repeat what he said. "All right!" I said, still hanging on to the gun. "Come along and we'll bowl him over." He followed me



into my room with a face like a fiend in torment. And, as truly as I'm yarning here, there *was* a huge brindled beast of a pariah sitting *on my bed!*'

'Tall, sir, tall. But go on. The audience is now awake.'

'Hang it! Could I have invented that pariah? Stovey dropped of the gun and flopped down in a corner and yowled. I went "*Ee ki ri ki re!*" like a woman in hysterics, pitched the gun forward and loosed off through a window.'

'And the pariah?'

'He quitted for the time being. Stovey was in an awful state. He swore the animal hadn't been there when I called him. That was true enough. I firmly believe Providence put it there to save me from being killed by the infuriated Stovey.'

'You've too lively a belief in Providence altogether. What happened?'

'Stovey tried to recover himself and pass it all over, but he let me keep the gun and went to bed. About two days afterwards old Baggs turned up on tour, and I told him Stovey wanted watching—more than I could give him. I don't know whether Baggs or the dog did it, but he didn't throw any more suicidal splints. I was transferred a little while afterwards.'

'Ever meet the man again?'

'Yes; once at Sheik Katan *dák*-bungalow—trailing the big brindled dog after him.'

'Oh, it was real, then. I thought it was arranged for the occasion.'

'Not a bit. It was a *pukka* pariah. Stovey seemed to remember me in the same way that a horse seems to

remember. I fancy his brain was a little cloudy. We tiffined together—*after* the dog had been fed, if you please—and Stovey said to me: "See that dog? He saved my life once. Oh, by the way, I believe you were there, too, weren't you?" I shouldn't care to work with Stovey again.'

There was a holy pause in the smoking-room of the Toopare Club.

'What I like about Saveloy's play,' said Martha, looking at the ceiling, 'is the beautifully artistic way in which he follows up a flush with a full. Go to bed, old man!'



‘SLEIPNER,’ LATE ‘THURINDA’



## 'SLEIPNER,' LATE 'THURINDA'

There are men, both good and wise, who hold that  
in a future state

Dumb creatures we have cherished here below  
Will give us joyous welcome as we pass the Golden  
Gate.

Is it folly if I hope it may be so?

*The Place Where the Old Horse Died.*

IF THERE WERE ANY EXPLANATION available here, I should be the first person to offer it. Unfortunately, there is not, and I am compelled to confine myself to the facts of the case as vouched for by Horder e and confirmed by 'Guj,' who is the last man in the world to throw away a valuable horse for nothing.

Jale came up with Thurinda to the Shayid Spring Meeting; and besides Thurinda his string included Divorce, Meg's Diversions, and Benoni—ponies of sorts. He won the Officers' Scurry—five furlongs—with Benoni on the first day, and that sent up the price of the stable in the evening lotteries; for Benoni was the worst-looking of the three, being a pigeon-toed, split-chested carriage horse, with a wonderful gift of blundering in on his shoulders—ridden out to the last ounce—but first. Next day Jale was riding Divorce in the Wattle and Dab Stakes—round the jump course; and she turned over at the on-and-off course when she was leading and managed to break her neck. She never stirred from the place where she dropped, and Jale did not move either till he was

carried off the ground to his tent close to the big tent where the lotteries were held. He had ricked his back, and everything below the hips was as dead as timber. Otherwise he was perfectly well. The doctor said that the stiffness would spread and that he would die before morning. Jale insisted upon knowing the worst, and when he heard it sent a pencil note to the Honorary Secretary, saying that they were not to stop the races or do anything foolish of the kind. If he hung on till the next day the nominations for the third day's racing would not be void, and he would settle all claims before he threw up his hand. This relieved the Honorary Secretary, because most of the horses had come from a long distance, and, under any circumstances, even had the Judge dropped dead in the box, it would have been impossible to have postponed the racing. There was a great deal of money on the third day, and as five or six of the owners were gentlemen who would make even one day's delay an excuse—well, settling would not be easy. No one knew much about Jale. He was an outsider from down-country, but every one hoped that, since he was doomed, he would live through the third day and save trouble.

Jale lay on his bed in the tent and asked the doctor and the man who catered to the refreshments—he was the nearest at the time—to witness his will. 'I don't know how long my arms will be workable,' said Jale, 'and we'd better get this business over.' The private arrangements of the will concern nobody but Jale's friends; but there was one clause that was rather curious. 'Who was that man with the brindled hair who put me up for a night until the tent was ready?

‘SLEIPNER,’ LATE ‘THURINDA’

The man who rode down to pick me up when I was smashed. Nice sort of fellow he seemed.’ ‘Hordene?’ said the doctor. ‘Yes, Hordene. Good chap, Hordene. He keeps Bull whisky. Write down that I give this johnny Hordene Thurinda for his own, if he can sell the other ponies. Thurinda’s a good mare. He can enter her—post entry—for the All Horse Sweep if he likes—on the last day. Have you got that down? I suppose the Stewards’ll recognise the gift?’ ‘No trouble about that,’ said the doctor. ‘All right. Give him the other two ponies to sell. They’re entered for the last day’s races, but I shall be dead then. Tell him to send the money to —’ Here he gave an address. ‘Now I’ll sign and you sign, and that’s all. This deadness is coming up between my shoulders.’

Jale lived, dying very slowly, till the third day’s racing, and up till the time of the lotteries on the fourth day’s racing. The doctor was rather surprised. Hordene came in to thank him for his gift, and to suggest that it would be much better to sell Thurinda with the others. She was the best of them all, and would have fetched twelve hundred on her looking-over merits only. ‘Don’t you bother,’ said Jale. ‘You take her. I rather liked you. I’ve got no people, and that Bull whisky was first-class stuff. I’m pegging out now, I think.’

The lottery-tent outside was beginning to fill, and Jale heard the click of the dice. ‘That’s all right,’ said he. ‘I wish I was there, but—I’m—going to the drawer.’ Then he died quietly. Hordene went into the lottery-tent, after calling the doctor. ‘How’s Jale?’ said the Honorary Secretary. ‘Gone to the drawer,’ said Hor-



dene, settling into a chair and reaching out for a lottery-paper. 'Poor beggar!' said the Honorary Secretary. 'Twasn't the fault of our on-and-off, though. The mare blundered. Gentlemen! gentlemen! Nine hundred and eighty rupees in the lottery, and River of Years for sale!' The lottery lasted far into the night, and there was a supplementary lottery on the All Horse Sweep, where Thurinda sold for a song, and was not bought in by her owner. 'It's not lucky,' said Hordene, and the rest of the men agreed with him. 'I ride her myself, but I don't know anything about her, and I wish to goodness I hadn't taken her,' said he. 'Oh, bosh!' said the Secretary. 'Never refuse a horse or a drink, however you come by them. No one objects, do they? Not going to refer this matter to Calcutta, are we? Here, somebody, bid! Eleven hundred and fifty rupees in the lottery, and Thurinda—absolutely unknown, acquired under the most dramatic circumstances from about *the* toughest man it has ever been my good fortune to meet—for sale. Hullo, Nurji, is that you? Gentlemen, where a Pagan bids shall enlightened Christians hang back? Ten! Going, going, gone!' 'You want ha-af, sar?' said the battered native trainer to Hordene. 'No, thanks—not a bit of her for me.'

The All Horse Sweep was run, and won by Thurinda by a street and three-quarters, to be very accurate, amid derisive cheers, which Hordene, who flattered himself that he knew something about riding, could not understand. On pulling up he looked over his shoulder and saw that the second horse was only just passing the box. 'Now, how did I make such a fool of myself?' he said as he returned to weigh out.

‘SLEIPNER,’ LATE ‘THURINDA’

His friends gathered round him and asked tenderly whether this was the first time that he had got up, and whether it was *absolutely* necessary that the winning horse should be ridden out when the field was hopelessly pumped, a quarter of a mile behind, etc. etc. ‘I-I-thought River of Years was pressing me,’ explained Hordene. ‘River of Years was wallowing, absolutely wallowing,’ said the man, ‘before you turned into the straight. You rode like a—hang it—like a Militia subaltern!’

The Shayid Spring Meeting broke up and the sportsmen turned their steps towards the next carcass—the Ghoriah Spring Meeting. With them went ‘Thurinda’s owner, the happy possessor of an almost perfect animal. ‘She’s as easy as a Pullman car and about twice as fast,’ he was wont to say in moments of confidence to his intimates. ‘For all her bulk, she’s as handy as a polo-pony; a child might ride her, and when she’s at the post she’s as cute—she’s as cute as the bally starter himself.’ Many times had Hordene said this, till at last one unsympathetic friend answered with: ‘When a man talks too much about his wife or his horse, it’s a sure sign he’s trying to make himself like ’em. I mistrust your Thurinda. She’s too good, or else——’

‘Or else what?’

‘You’re trying to believe you like her.’

‘Like her! I *love* her! I trust that darling as I’m shot if I’d trust you. I’d hack her for tuppence.’

‘Hack away, then. I don’t want to hurt your feelings. I don’t hack my stable myself, but some horses go better for it. Come and peacock at the band-stand this evening.’

To the band-stand accordingly Hordene came, and the lovely Thurinda comported herself with all the gravity and decorum that might have been expected. Hordene rode home with the scoffer, through the dusk, discoursing on matters indifferent. 'Hold up a minute,' said his friend, 'there's Gagley riding behind us.' Then, raising his voice: 'Come along, Gagley! I want to speak to you about the Race Ball.' But no Gagley came; and the couple went forward at a trot. 'Hang it! There's that man behind us still.' Hordene listened and could clearly hear the sound of a horse trotting, apparently just behind them. 'Come on, Gagley! Don't play bo-peep in that ridiculous way,' shouted the friend. Again no Gagley. Twenty yards farther there was a crash and a stumble as the friend's horse came down over an unseen rat-hole. 'How much damaged?' asked Hordene. 'Sprained my wrist,' was the dolorous answer, 'and there is something wrong with my kneecap. There goes my mount to-morrow, and this gee is cut about like a cab-horse.'

On the first day of the Ghoriah meeting Thurinda was hopelessly ridden out by a native jockey, to whose care Hordene had at the last moment been compelled to confide her. 'You forsaken idiot!' said he. 'What made you begin riding as soon as you were clear? She had everything safe, if you'd only left her alone. You rode her out before the home turn, you hog!'

'What could I do?' said the jockey sullenly. 'I was pressed by another horse.'

'Whose "other horse"? There were twenty yards of daylight between you and the ruck. If you'd kept her

there even then 'twouldn't ha' mattered. But you rode her out—you rode her out!

'There was another horse and he pressed me to the end, and when I looked round he was no longer there.'

Let us, in charity, draw a veil over Hordene's language at this point. 'Goodness knows whether she'll be fit to pull out again for the last event. D—! you and your other horses! I wish I'd broken your neck before letting you get up!'

Thurinda was done to a turn, and it seemed a cruelty to ask her to run again in the last race of the day. Hordene rode this time, and was careful to keep the mare within herself at the outset. Once more Thurinda left her field—with one exception—a grey horse that hung upon her flanks and could not be shaken off. The mare was done, and refused to answer the call upon her. She tried hopelessly in the straight and was caught and passed by her old enemy, River of Years—the chestnut of Kurnaul. 'You rode like a native, Hordene,' was the unflattering comment. 'The mare was ridden out before River of Years made her effort.' 'But the grey,' began Hordene, and then ceased, for he knew that there was no grey in the race. Blue Point and Diamond Dust, the only greys at the meeting, were running in the Arab Handicap.

He caught his native jockey. 'What horse, d'you say, pressed you?'

'I don't know. It was a grey with nutmeg tickings behind the saddle.'

That evening Hordene sought the great Major Blare-Tyndar, who knew personally the father, mother, and ancestors of almost every horse brought

from country-carts or ships, that had ever set foot on an Indian race-course. 'Say, Major, what is a grey horse with nutmeg tickings behind the saddle?'

'A curiosity. Wendell Holmes is a grey, with nutmeg on the near shoulder, but there is no horse marked your way, now.' Then, after a pause: 'No, I'm wrong—you ought to know. The pony that got you Thurinda was grey-and-nutmeg.'

'How much?'

'Divorce, of course. The mare that broke her neck at the Shayid meeting and killed Jale. A big grey thirteen-three she was. I recollect when she was hacking old Snuffy Beans to office. He bought her from a dealer, who had her left on his hands as a rejection when the Pink Hussars were buying polo-ponies up-country, and then—Hullo! The man's gone!'

Hordene had departed on receipt of information which he already knew. He only demanded extra confirmation. Then he began to argue with himself, bearing in mind that he himself was a sane man, neither gluttonous nor a wine-bibber, with an unimpaired digestion, and that Thurinda was to all appearances a horse of ordinary flesh and exceedingly good blood. Arrived at these satisfactory conclusions, he reargued the whole matter.

Being by nature intensely superstitious, he decided upon scratching Thurinda and facing the howl of indignation that would follow. He also decided to leave the Ghoriah meeting and change his luck. But it would have been sinful—positively wicked—to have left without waiting for the polo-match that was to conclude the festivities. At the last moment before the

match, one of the leading players of the Ghoriah team and Hordene's host discovered that, through the kindly foresight of his head groom, every single pony had been taken down to the ground. ‘Lend me a hack, old man,’ he shouted to Hordene as he was changing. ‘Take Thurinda,’ was the reply. ‘She'll bring you down in ten minutes.’ And Thurinda was accordingly saddled for Marish's benefit. ‘I'll go down with you,’ said Hordene. The two rode off together at a hand canter.

‘By Jove! Somebody's groom'll get kicked for this!’ said Marish, looking round. ‘Look there! He's coming for the mare! Pull out into the middle o' the road.’

‘What on earth d'you mean?’

‘Well, if *you* can take a strayed horse so calmly, I can't. Didn't you see what a lather that grey was in?’

‘What grey?’

‘The grey that just passed us—saddle and all. He's bolted away from the polo-ground, I suppose. Now he's turned the corner; but you can hear his hoofs. Listen!’ There was a furious gallop of shod horses, gradually dying into silence. ‘Come along,’ said Hordene. ‘We're late as it is. We shall know all about it on the ground.’

‘Anybody lost a horse?’ asked Marish cheerily as they reached the ground.

‘No, we've lost *you*. Double up. You're late enough as it is. Get up and go in. The teams are waiting.’

Marish mounted his polo-pony and cantered across. Hordene watched the game idly for a few moments.

There was a scrimmage, a cloud of dust, and a cessation of play, and a shouting for grooms. The umpire clattered forward and returned. 'What has happened?' 'Marish! Neck broken! Nobody's fault. Pony crossed its legs and came down. Game's stopped. Thank God, he hasn't got a wife!' Again Hordene pondered as he sat on his horse's back. 'Under any circumstances it was written that he was to be killed. I had no interest in his death, and he had his warning, I suppose. I can't make out the system that this infernal mare runs under. Why *him*? Anyway, I'll shoot her.' He looked at Thurinda, the calm-eyed, the beautiful, and repented. 'No! I'll sell her.'

'What in the world has happened to Thurinda that Hordene is so keen on getting rid of her?' was the general question. 'I want money,' said Hordene unblushingly, and the few who knew how his accounts stood saw that this was a varnished lie. But they held their peace because of the great love and trust that exists among the ancient and honourable fraternity of sportsmen.

'There's nothing wrong with her,' explained Hordene. 'Try her as much as you like, but let her stay in my stable until you've made up your mind one way or the other. Nine hundred's my price.'

'I'll take her at that,' quoth a red-haired subaltern, nicknamed Carrots, later Gaja, and then, for brevity's sake, Guj. 'Let me have her out this afternoon. I want her more for hacking than anything else.'

Guj tried Thurinda exhaustively and had no fault to find with her. 'She's all right,' he said briefly. 'I'll take her. It's a cash deal.'

‘Virtuous Guj!’ said Hordene, pocketing the cheque. ‘If you go on like this you’ll be loved and respected by all who know you.’

A week later Guj insisted that Hordene should accompany him on a ride. They cantered merrily for a time. Then said the subaltern: ‘Listen to the mare’s beat a minute, will you? Seems to me that you’ve sold me two horses.’

Behind the mare was plainly audible the cadence of a swiftly trotting horse. ‘D’you hear anything?’ said Guj.

‘No—nothing but the regular beat,’ said Hordene; and he lied when he answered. Guj looked at him keenly and said nothing.

Two or three months passed and Hordene was perplexed to see his old property running, and running well, under the curious title of ‘Sleipner—late Thurinda.’ He consulted the great Major, who said: ‘I don’t know a horse called Sleipner, but I know of one. He was a northern-bred, and belonged to Odin.’

‘A mythological beast?’

‘Exactly. Like Bucephalus and the rest of ’em. He was a great horse. I wish I had some of his get in my stable.’

‘Why?’

‘Because he had eight legs. When he had used up one set, he let down the other four to come up the straight on. Stewards were lenient in those days. *Now* it’s all you can do to get a crock with *three* sound legs.’

Hordene cursed the red-haired Guj in his heart for finding out the mare’s peculiarity. Then he cursed the dead man Jale for his ridiculous interference with a



free gift. 'If it was given—it was given,' said Hordene, 'and he has no right to come messing about after it.'

When Guj and he next met, he inquired tenderly after Thurinda. The red-haired subaltern, impassive as usual, answered: 'I've shot her.'

'Well—you know your own affairs best,' said Hordene.

'You've given yourself away,' said Guj. 'What makes you think I shot a sound horse? She might have been bitten by a mad dog, or lamed.'

'You didn't say that,' said Hordene.

'No, I didn't, because I've a notion that you knew what was wrong with her.'

'Wrong with her! She was as sound as a bell——'

'I know that. Don't pretend to misunderstand. You'll believe *me*, and I'll believe *you* in this show; but no one else will believe *us*. That mare was a bally nightmare.'

'Go on,' said Hordene.

Guj went on. 'I stuck the noise of the other horse as long as I could, and called her Sleipner on the strength of it. Sleipner was a stallion, but that's a detail. When it got to interfering with every race I rode it was more than I could stick. I took her out of racing, and, on my honour, since that time I've been nearly driven out of my mind by a grey-and-nutmeg pony. It used to trot round my quarters at night, fool about the Mall, and graze about the compound. You *know* that pony. It isn't a pony to catch or ride or hit, is it?'

'No,' said Hordene. 'I've seen it.'

'So I shot Thurinda; that was a thousand rupees out of my pocket. And old Stiffer, who's got his new

crematorium in full blast, cremated her. I say, what *was* the matter with the mare? Was she bewitched?’ said Guj.

Hordene told the story of the gift, which Guj heard out to the end. ‘Now, that’s a nice sort of yarn to tell in a Mess-room, isn’t it? They’d call it jumps or insanity,’ said Guj. ‘There’s no reason in it. It doesn’t lead up to anything. It only killed poor Marish and made you stick me with the mare; and yet it’s true. Are you mad or drunk, or am I? That’s the only explanation.’

‘Can’t be drunk for nine months on end, and madness would show in that time,’ said Hordene.

‘All right,’ said Guj recklessly, going to the window. ‘I’ll lay that ghost.’ He leaned out into the night and shouted: ‘Jale! Jale! Jale! Wherever you are.’ There was a pause and then up the compound-drive came the clatter of a horse’s feet. The red-haired subaltern blanched under his freckles to the colour of glycerine soap. ‘Thurinda’s dead,’ he muttered, ‘and—and all bets are off. Go back to your grave again.’

Hordene was watching him open-mouthed.

‘Now bring me a strait-jacket or a glass of brandy,’ said Guj. ‘That’s enough to turn a man’s hair white. What did the poor wretch mean by knocking about the earth?’

‘Don’t know,’ whispered Hordene hoarsely. ‘Let’s get over to the Club. I’m feeling a bit shaky.’



## A SUPPLEMENTARY CHAPTER



## A SUPPLEMENTARY CHAPTER

Shall I not one day remember thy bower—  
One day when all days are one to me?—  
Thinking, 'I stirred not and yet had the power!'—  
Yearning, 'Ah, God, if again it might be!'  
D. G. ROSSITT.

THIS IS A BASE BETRAYAL of confidence, but the sin is Mrs. Hauksbee's and not mine.

If you remember a certain foolish tale called 'The Education of Otis Yeere,'<sup>1</sup> you will not forget that Mrs. Mallowe laughed at the wrong time, which was a single, and at Mrs. Hauksbee, which was a double, offence. An experiment had gone wrong, and it seems that Mrs. Mallowe had said some quaint things about the experimentrix.

'I am not angry,' said Mrs. Hauksbee, 'and I admire Polly in spite of her evil counsels to me. But I shall wait—I shall wait, like the Frog-Footman in *Alice in Wonderland*, and Providence will deliver Polly into my hands. It always does if you wait.' And she departed to vex the soul of the Hawley Boy, who says that she is singularly 'uninstructed and childlike.' He got that first word out of a Ouida novel. I do not know what it means, but am prepared to make affidavit before the Collector that it does not mean Mrs. Hauksbee.

Mrs. Hauksbee's ideas of waiting are very liberal. She told the Hawley Boy that he dared not tell Mrs.

<sup>1</sup> *Wee Willie Winkie*.

Reiver that she was an intellectual woman with a gift for attracting men, and she offered another man two waltzes if he would repeat the same thing in the same ears. But he said, 'Timeo Danaos et dona ferentes,' which means: 'Mistrust all waltzes except those you get for legitimate asking.'

The Hawley Boy did as he was told because he believes in Mrs. Hauksbee. He was the instrument in the hands of a Higher Power, and he wore *jharun* [linen check] coats, like 'the scoriac rivers that roll their sulphurous torrents down Yanek, in the realms of the Boreal Pole,' that made your temples throb when seen early in the morning. I will introduce him to you some day if all goes well.<sup>1</sup> He is worth knowing.

Unpleasant things have already been written about Mrs. Reiver in other places.<sup>2</sup>

She was a person without invention. She used to get her ideas from the men she captured, and this led to some eccentric changes of character. For a month or two she would act *à la* Madonna, and try Théo for a change if she fancied Théo's ways suited her beauty. Then she would attempt the dark and fiery Lilith, and so on and so on, exactly as she had absorbed the new notion. But there was always Mrs. Reiver—hard, selfish, stupid Mrs. Reiver—at the back of each transformation. Mrs. Hauksbee christened her the Magic-Lantern on account of this borrowed mutability. 'It just depends upon the slide,' said Mrs. Hauksbee. 'The

<sup>1</sup> 'A Second-Rate Woman,' *Wee Willie Winkie*.

<sup>2</sup> 'The Rescue of Pluffles' and other stories in *Plain Tales from the Hills*.

case is the only permanent thing in the exhibition. But that, thank Heaven, is getting old.'

There was a Fancy Ball at Government House and Mrs. Reiver came attired in some sort of '98 costume, with her hair pulled up to the top of her head, showing the clear outline on the back of the neck like the Récamier engravings. Mrs. Hauksbee had chosen to be loud, not to say vulgar, that evening, and went as The Black Death—a curious arrangement of barred velvet, black domino and flame-coloured satin puffery coming up to the neck and the wrists, with one of those shrieking keel-backed cicalas in the hair. The scream of the creature made people jump. It sounded so unearthly in a ballroom.

I heard her say to some one: 'Let me introduce you to Madame Récamier,' and I saw a man dressed as Autolycus bowing to Mrs. Reiver, while The Black Death looked more than usually saintly. It was a very pleasant evening, and Autolycus and Madame Récamier—I heard her ask Autolycus who Madame Récamier was, by the way—danced together ever so much. Mrs. Hauksbee was in a meditative mood, but she laughed once or twice in the back of her throat, and that meant trouble.

Autolycus was Trewinnard, the man whom Mrs. Mallowe had told Mrs. Hauksbee about—the Platonic Paragon, as Mrs. Hauksbee called him. He was amiable, but his moustache hid his mouth, and so he did not explain himself all at once. If you stared at him, he turned his eyes away, and through the rest of the dinner kept looking at you to see whether you were looking again. He took stares as a tribute to his merits,



which were generally known and recognised. When he played billiards he apologised at length between each bad stroke, and explained what would have happened if the red had been somewhere else, or the bearer had trimmed the third lamp, or the wind hadn't made the door bang. Also he wriggled in his chair more than was becoming to one of his inches. Little men may wriggle and fidget without attracting notice. It doesn't suit big-framed men. He was the Main Girder Boom of the Kutcha Pukka, Bundobust and Benaoti Department and corresponded direct with the Three-Taped Bashaw. Every one knows what *that* means. The men in his office said that where anything was to be gained, even temporarily, he would never hesitate for a moment over handing up a subordinate to be hanged and drawn and quartered. He didn't back up his underlings, and for that reason they dreaded taking responsibility on their shoulders, and the strength of the Department was crippled.

A weak Department can, and often does, do a power of good work simply because its chief sees it through thick and thin. Mistakes may be born of this policy, but it is safer and sounder than giving orders which may be read in two ways and reserving to yourself the right of interpretation according to subsequent failure or success. Offices prefer administration to diplomacy. They are very like Empires.

Hatchett of the Almirah and Thannicutch—a vicious little three-cornered Department that was always stamping on the toes of the Elect—had the fairest estimate of Trewinnard, when he said: 'I don't believe he is as good as he is.' They always quoted that verdict

as an instance of the blind jealousy of the Uncovenanted, but Hatchett was quite right. Trewinnard was just as good and no better than Mrs. Mallowe could make him; and she had been engaged on the work for three years. Hatchett has a narrow-minded partiality for the more than naked—the anatomised Truth—but he can gauge a man.

Trewinnard had been spoilt by over-much petting, and the devil of vanity that rides nine hundred and ninety-nine men out of a thousand made him believe as he did. He had been too long one woman's property; and that belief will sometimes drive a man to throw the best things in the world behind him, from rank perversity. Perhaps he only meant to stray temporarily and then return, but in arranging for this excursion he misunderstood both Mrs. Mallowe and Mrs. Reiver. The one made no sign—she would have died first; and the other—well, the high-falutin mind-some lay was her craze for the time being. She had never tried it before and several men had hinted that it would eminently become her. Trewinnard was in himself pleasant, with the great merit of belonging to somebody else. He was what they call 'intellectual,' and vain to the marrow. Mrs. Reiver returned his lead in the first, and hopelessly out-trumped him in the second suit. Put down all that comes after this to Providence or The Black Death.

Trewinnard never realised how far he had fallen from his allegiance till Mrs. Reiver referred to some official matter that he had been telling her about as 'ours.' He remembered then how that word had been sacred to Mrs. Mallowe and how she had asked his

permission to use it. Opium is intoxicating, and so is whisky, but more intoxicating than either to a certain build of mind is the first occasion on which a woman—especially if she have asked leave for the ‘honour’—identifies herself with a man’s work. The second time is not so pleasant. The answer has been given before, and the treachery comes to the top and tastes coppery in the mouth.

Trewinnard swallowed the shame—he felt dimly that he was not doing Mrs. Reiver any great wrong by untruth—and told and told and continued to tell, for the snare of this form of open-heartedness is that no man, unless he be a consummate liar, knows where to stop. The office door of all others must be either open wide or shut tight with an orderly to keep off callers.

Mrs. Mallowe made no sign to show that she felt Trewinnard’s desertion till a piece of information that could only have come from *one* quarter ran about Simla like quicksilver. She met Trewinnard at a dinner. ‘Choose your *confidantes* better, Harold,’ she whispered as she passed him in the drawing-room. He turned salmon-colour, and swore very hard to himself that Babu Durga Charan Laha must go—must go—must go. He almost believed in that grey-headed old oyster’s guilt.

And so another of those upside-down tragedies that we call a Simla Season wore through to the end—from the Birthday Ball to the ‘tripping’ to Naldera and Kotghar. And fools gave feasts and wise men ate them, and they were bidden to the wedding and sat down to bake, and those who had nuts had no teeth, and they staked the substance for the shadow, and carried coals

## A SUPPLEMENTARY CHAPTER

to Newcastle, and in the dark all cats were grey, as it was in the days of the great Curé of Meudon.

Late in the year there developed itself a battle-royal between the K.P.B. and B. Department and the Almirah and Thannicutch. Three columns of this paper<sup>1</sup> would be needed to supply you with the cut-lines of the difficulty; and then you would not be grateful. Hatchett snuffed the fray from afar and went into it with his teeth bared to the gums, while his Department stood behind him solid to a man. They believed in him, and their answer to the fury of men who detested him was, 'Ah! But you'll admit he's d——d right in what he says.'

'I want the head of Trewinnard in a Government Resolution,' said Hatchett, and he told the clerk to put a new pad on his blotter, and smiled a bleak smile as he spread out his notes. Hatchett is a Thug in his systematic way of butchering a man's reputation.

'What are you going to do?' asked Trewinnard's Department when the row began. 'Sit tight,' said Trewinnard, which was tantamount to saying 'Lord knows.' The Department groaned and said: 'Which of us poor beggars is to be Jonah *this* time?' They knew Trewinnard's vice.

The dispute was essentially not one for the K.P.B. and B. under its then direction to fight out. It should have been compromised, or at the worst sent up to the Supreme Government with a private and confidential note directing justice into the proper paths.

Some people say that the Supreme Government is the Devil. It is more like the Deep Sea. Anything that

<sup>1</sup> *The Week's News*, Allahabad.

you throw into it disappears for weeks, and comes to light hacked and furred at the edges, crusted with weeds and shells and almost unrecognisable. The bold man who would dare to give it a file of love-letters would be amply rewarded. It would overlay them with original comments and marginal notes, and work them piecemeal into Demi-Official dockets. Few things, from a letter or a whirlpool to a sausage-machine or a hatching hen, are more interesting and peculiar than the Supreme Government.

‘What shall we do?’ said Trewinnard, who had fallen from grace into sin. ‘Fight Hatchett,’ said Mrs. Reiver, or words to that effect; and no one can say how far aimless desire to test her powers, and how far belief in the man she had brought to her feet prompted the judgment. Of the merits of the case she knew just as much as any servant.

Then Mrs. Mallowe, upon an evil word that went through Simla, put on her visiting garb and attired herself for the sacrifice, and went to call—to call upon Mrs. Reiver, knowing what the torture would be. From half past twelve till twenty-five minutes to two she sat, her hand upon her card-case, and let Mrs. Reiver stab at her, all for the sake of the information. Mrs. Reiver double-acted her part, but she played into Mrs. Mallowe’s hand by this defect. The assumptions of ownership in Trewinnard, the little intentional slips, were overdone, and so also was the pretence of intimate knowledge. Mrs. Mallowe never winced. She repeated to herself: ‘And he had trusted this—this Thing. She knows nothing and she cares nothing, and she has digged this trap for him.’ The

main feature of the case was abundantly clear. Trewinnard, whose capacities Mrs. Mallowe knew to the utmost farthing, to whom public and Departmental petting were as the breath of his delicately cut nostrils—Trewinnard, with his nervous dread of dispraise, was to be pitted against the Paul de Cassagnac of the *Almirah* and Thannicutch—the unspeakable Hatcl ett, who fought with the venom of a woman and the kill of a Red Indian. Unless his cause was triply just, Trewinnard was already under the guillotine, and if he had been under this 'Thing's' dominance, small hope for the justice of his case. 'Oh, why did I let him go without putting out a hand to fetch him back?' said Mrs. Mallowe, as she got into her 'rickshaw.

Now, Tim, her fox-terrier, is the only person who knows what Mrs. Mallowe did that afternoon, and as I found him loafing on the Mall in a very disconsolate condition and as he recognised me effusively and suggested going for a monkey-hunt—a thing he had never done before—my impression is that Mrs. Mallowe stayed at home till the light fell and thought. If she did this, it is of course hopeless to account for her actions. So you must fill in the gap for yourself.

That evening it rained heavily, and horses mired their riders. But not one of the habits was so plastered with mud as the habit of Mrs. Mallowe when she pulled up under the scrub-oaks and sent in her name by the astounded bearer to Trewinnard. 'Folly! downright folly!' she said as she sat in the steam of the dripping horse. 'But it's all a horrible jumble together.'

It may be as well to mention that ladies do not usually call upon bachelors at their houses. Bachelors

would scream and run away. Trewinnard came into the light of the veranda with a nervous, undecided smile upon his lips, and he wished—in the bottomless bottom of his bad heart—he wished that Mrs. Reiver was there to see. A minute later he was profoundly glad that he was alone, for Mrs. Mallowe was standing in his office room and calling him names that reflected no credit on his intellect. ‘What have you done? What have you said?’ she asked. ‘Be quick! Be quick! And have the horse led round to the back. Can you speak? What have you written? Show me!’

She had interrupted him in the middle of what he was pleased to call his official reply: for Hatchett’s first shell had already fallen in the camp. He stood back and offered her the seat at the office table. Her elbow left a great wet stain on the baize, for she was soaked through and through.

‘Say exactly how the matter stands,’ she said, and laughed a weak little laugh, which emboldened Trewinnard to say loftily: ‘Pardon me, Mrs. Mallowe, but I hardly recognise your——’

‘Idiot! Will you show me the papers, will you speak, and *will* you be quick?’

Her most reverent admirers would hardly have recognised the soft-spoken, slow-gestured, quiet-eyed Mrs. Mallowe in the indignant woman who was drumming on Trewinnard’s desk. He submitted to the voice of authority, as he had submitted in the old times, and explained as quickly as might be the cause of the war between the two Departments. In conclusion he handed over the rough sheets of his reply. As she read he watched her with the expectant sickly

half-smile of the unaccustomed writer who is doubtful of the success of his work. And another smile followed, but died away as he saw Mrs. Mallowe read his production. All the old phrases out of which she had so carefully drilled him had returned; the unpruned fluency of diction was there, the more luxuriant for being so long cut back; the reckless riotousness of assertion that sacrificed all—even the vital truth that Hatchett would be so sure to take advantage of—for the sake of scoring a point, was there; and through and between every line ran the weak, wilful vanity of the man. Mrs. Mallowe's mouth hardened.

'And you wrote this!' she said. Then to herself: 'He wrote this!'

Trewinnard stepped forward with a gesture habitual to him when he wished to explain. Mrs. Reiver had never asked for explanations. She had told him that all his ways were perfect. Therefore he loved her.

Mrs. Mallowe tore up the papers one by one, saying as she did so: 'You were going to cross swords with Hatchett. Do you know your own strength? Oh, Harold, Harold, it is *too* pitiable! I thought—I thought——' Then the great anger that had been growing in her broke out, and she cried: 'Oh, you fool! You blind, blind, *blind*, trumpery fool! Why do I help you? Why do I have anything to do with you? You miserable man! Sit down and write as I dictate. Quickly! And I had chosen *you* out of a hundred other *men*! Write!' It is a terrible thing to be found out by a mere unseeing male—Thackeray has said it. It is worse, far worse, to be found out by a woman,



and in that hour after long years to discover her worth. For ten minutes Trewinnard's pen scratched across the paper, and Mrs. Mallowe spoke. 'And that is all,' she said bitterly. 'As you value yourself—your noble, honourable, modest self—keep within that.'

But that was not all—by any means. At least as far as Trewinnard was concerned.

He rose from his chair and delivered his soul of many mad and futile thoughts—such things as a man babbles when he is deserted of the Gods, has missed his hold upon the latch-door of Opportunity—and cannot see that the ways are shut. Mrs. Mallowe bore with him to the end, and he stood before her—no enviable creature to look upon.

'A cur as well as a fool!' she said. 'Will you be good enough to tell them to bring my horse? I do not trust your honour—you have none—but I believe that your sense of shame will keep you from speaking of my visit.'

So he was left in the veranda crying 'Come back' like a distracted guinea-fowl.

'He's done us in the eye,' grunted Hatchett as he perused the K.P.B. and B. reply. 'Look at the cunning of the brute in shifting the issue on to the Supreme Government in that carneying, blarneying way! Only wait until I can get my knife into him again. I'll stop every bolt-hole before the hunt begins.'

Oh, I believe I have forgotten to mention the success of Mrs. Hauksbee's revenge. It was so brilliant and overwhelming that she had to cry in Mrs.

## A SUPPLEMENTARY CHAPTER

Mallowe's arms for the better part of half an hour; and Mrs. Mallowe was just as bad, though she thanked Mrs. Hauksbee several times in the course of the interview, and Mrs. Hauksbee said that she would repent and reform, and Mrs. Mallowe said: 'Hush, dear, hush! I don't think either of us had anything to be proud of.' And Mrs. Hauksbee said: 'Oh, but I didn't *mean* it, Polly, I didn't *mean* it!' And I stood with my hat in my hand trying to make two very indignant ladies understand that the bearer really *had* given me '*salaam bolta*. [The lady is at home.]'

That was an evil quarter-minute.



## CHAUTAUQUAED

'Chautauquaed' was originally one of the letters composing *From Sea to Sea*, but was omitted when they were reprinted in book form.

## CHAUTAUQUAED

*Tells how the Professor and I found the Precious Ridiculouses and how they Chautauquaed at us. Put into Print some Sentiments better left unrecorded, and proves that a Neglected Theory will blossom in Congenial Soil. Contains fragments of Three Lectures and a Confession.*

But these, tho' fed with careful dirt,  
Are neither green nor sappy;  
Half-conscious of the garden-squirt,  
The spindlings look unhappy.

TENNYS ON.

OUT OF THE SILENCE under the apple-trees the Professor spake. One leg thrust from the hammock-netting kicked lazily at the blue. There was the crisp crunch of teeth in an apple-core.

'Get out of this,' said the Professor lazily. As it was on the banks of the Hugli, so on the green borders of the Musquash and the Ohio—eternal unrest, and the insensate desire to go ahead. I was lapped in a very trance of peace. Even the apples brought no indigestion.

'Permanent Nuisance, what is the matter now?' I grunted.

'G'long out of this and go to Niagara,' said the Professor in jerks. 'Spread the ink of description through the waters of the Horseshoe Falls—buy a papoose from the tame wild Indian who lives at the Clifton House—take a fifty-cent ride on the *Maid of the Mist*—go over the Falls in a tub.'

‘Seriously, is it worth the trouble? Everybody who has ever been within fifty miles of the Falls has written his or her impressions. Everybody who has never seen the Falls knows all about them, and—besides, I want some more apples. They’re good in this place, ye big fat man,’ I quoted.

The Professor retired into his hammock for a while. Then he reappeared flushed with a new thought. ‘If you want to see something quite new let’s go to Chautauqua.’

‘What’s that?’

‘Well, it’s a sort of Institution. It’s an educational idea, and it lives on the borders of a lake in New York State. I think you’ll find it interesting; and I know it will show you a new side of American life.’

In blank ignorance I consented. Everybody is anxious that I should see as many sides of American life as possible. Here in the East they demand of me what I thought of their West. I dare not answer that it is as far from their notions and motives as Hindustan from Hoboken—that the West, to this poor thinking, is an America which has no kinship with its neighbour. Therefore I congratulated them hypocritically upon ‘their West,’ and from their lips learned that there is yet another America, that of the South—alien and distinct. Into the third country, alas! I shall not have time to penetrate. The newspapers and the oratory of the day will tell you that all feeling between the North and South is extinct. None the less the Northerner, outside his newspapers and public men, has a healthy contempt for the Southerner which the latter repays by what seems very like a deep-rooted

aversion to the Northerner. I have learned now what the sentiments of the great American nation mean. The North speaks in the name of the country; the West is busy developing its own resources, and the Southerner skulks in his tents. His opinions do not count; but his girls are very beautiful.

So the Professor and I took a train and went to look at the educational idea. From sleepy, quiet little Musquash we rattled through the coal and iron districts of Pennsylvania, her coke-ovens flaring into the night and her clamorous foundries waking the silence of the woods in which they lay. Twenty years hence woods and cornfields will be gone, and from Pittsburg to Shenango all will be smoky black as Bradford and Beverly: for each factory is drawing to itself a small town, and year by year the demand for rails increases. The Professor held forth on the labour question, his remarks being prompted by the sight of a trainload of Italians and Hungarians going home from mending a bridge.

‘You recollect the Burmese,’ said he. ‘The American is like the Burman in one way. He won’t do heavy manual labour. He knows too much. Consequently he imports the alien to be his hands—just as the Burman gets hold of the Madrassi. If he shuts down all labour immigration he will have to fill up his own dams, cut his cuttings and pile his own embankments. The American citizen won’t like that. He is racially unfit to be a labourer in dirt. He can invent, buy, sell, and design, but he cannot waste his time on earthworks. Therefore, this great people will resume contract labour immigration the minute they find the aliens in



their midst are not sufficient for the jobs in hand. If the alien gives them trouble they will shoot him.'

'Yes, they will shoot him,' I said, remembering how only two days before some Hungarians employed on a line near Musquash had seen fit to strike and to roll down rocks on labourers hired to take their places, an amusement which caused the Sheriff to open fire with a revolver and wound or kill (it really does not much matter which) two or three of them. Only a man who earns ten pence a day in sunny Italy knows how to howl for as many shillings in America.

The composition of the crowd in the cars began to attract my attention. There were very many women and a few clergymen. Where you shall find these two together, there also shall be a fad, a hobby, a theory, or a mission.

'These people are going to Chautauqua,' said the Professor. 'It's a sort of open-air college—they call it—but you'll understand things better when you arrive.' A grim twinkle in the back of his eye awakened all my fears.

'Can you get anything to drink there?'

'No.'

'Are you allowed to smoke?'

'Ye-es, in certain places.'

'Are we staying there over Sunday?'

'No.' This very emphatically.

Feminine shrieks of welcome: 'There's Sadie!' 'Why, Maimie, is that yeou!' 'Alf's in the smoker. Did you bring the baby?' and a profligate expenditure of kisses between bonnet and bonnet told me we had struck a gathering-place of the clans. It was midnight.

## CHAUTAUQUAED

They swept us, this horde of clamouring women, into a Black Maria omnibus and a sumptuous hotel close to the borders of a lake—Lake Chautauqua. Morning showed as pleasant a place of summer pleasuring as ever I wished to see. Smooth-cut lawns of velvet grass, studded with tennis-courts, surrounded the hotel and ran down to the blue waters, which were dotted with rowboats. Young men in wonderful blazers, and maidens in more wonderful tennis costumes; women attired with all the extravagance of unthinking Chicago or the grace of Washington (which is Simla) filled the grounds, and the neat French nurses and exquisitely dressed little children ran about together. There was pickerel-fishing; for such as enjoyed it; a bowling-alley, unlimited bathing, and a toboggan, besides many other amusements, all winding up with a dance or a concert at night. Women dominated the sham-mediaeval hotel, rampaged about the passages, flirted in the corridors and chased unruly children off the tennis-courts. This place was called Lakewood. It is a pleasant place for the unregenerate.

‘We go up the lake in a steamer to Chautauqua,’ said the Professor.

‘But I want to stay here. This is what I understand and like.’

‘No, you don’t. You must come along and be educated.’

All the shores of the lake, which is eighteen miles long, are dotted with summer hotels, camps, boat-houses, and pleasant places of rest. You go there with all your family to fish and to flirt. There is no special beauty in the landscape of tame cultivated hills and

decorous, woolly trees, but good taste and wealth have taken the place in hand, trimmed its borders and made it altogether delightful.

The Institution of Chautauqua is the largest village on the lake. I can't hope to give you an idea of it, but try to imagine the Charlesville at Mussoorie magnified ten times and set down in the midst of hundreds of tiny little hill-houses, each different from its neighbour, brightly painted and constructed of wood. Add something of the peace of dull Dalhousie, flavour with a tincture of missions and the old Polytechnic, *Cassell's Self-Educator*, and a Monday Pop, and spread the result out flat on the shores of Naini Tal Lake, which you will please transport to the Dun. But that does not half describe the idea. We watched it through a wicket-gate, where we were furnished with a red ticket, price forty cents, and five dollars if you lost it. I naturally lost mine on the spot and was fined accordingly.

Once inside the grounds on the paths that serpentine round the myriad cottages I was lost in admiration of scores of pretty girls, most of them with little books under their arms, and a pretty air of seriousness on their faces. Then I stumbled upon an elaborately arranged mass of artificial hillocks surrounding a mud puddle and a wormy streak of slime connecting it with another mud puddle. Little boulders topped with square pieces of putty were strewn over the hillocks—evidently with intention. When I hit my foot against one such boulder painted 'Jericho,' I demanded information in aggrieved tones.

'Hsh!' said the Professor. 'It's a model of Palestine—the Holy Land—done to scale and all that, you know.'

Two young people were flirting on the top of the highest mountain overlooking Jerusalem; the mud puddles were meant for the Dead Sea and the Sea of Galilee, and the twisting gutter was the Jordan. A small boy sat on the city 'Safed' and cast his line into Chautauqua Lake. On the whole it did not impress me. The hotel was filled with women, and a large blackboard in the main hall set forth the exercises of the day. It seemed that Chautauqua was a sort of educational syndicate, *cum* hotel, *cum* (very mild) Rosherville. There were annually classes of young women and young men who studied in the little cottages for two or three months in the year and went away to self-educate themselves. There were other classes who learned things by correspondence, and yet other classes made up the teachers. All these delights I had missed, but had arrived just in time for a sort of debauch of lectures which concluded the three months' education. The syndicate in control had hired various lecturers whose names would draw audiences, and these men were lecturing about the labour problem, the servant-girl question, the artistic and political aspects of Greek life, the Pope in the Middle Ages, and similar subjects, in all of which young women do naturally take deep delight. Professor Mahaffy (what the devil was he doing in that galley?) was the Greek Art side man, and a Dr. Gunsaulus handled the Pope. The latter I loved forthwith. He had been to some gathering on much the same lines as the Chautauqua one, and had there been detected, in the open daylight, smoking a cigar. One whole lighted cigar. Then his congregation or his class, or the mothers of both

of them, wished to know whether this was the sort of conduct for a man professing temperance. I have not heard Dr. Gunsaulus lecture, but he must be a good man. Professor Mahaffy was enjoying himself. I sat close to him at tiffin and heard him arguing with an American professor as to the merits of the American Constitution. Both men spoke that the table might get the benefit of their wisdom, whence I argued that even eminent professors are eminently human.

'Now, for goodness' sake, behave yourself,' said the Professor. 'You are not to ask the whereabouts of a bar. You are not to laugh at anything you see, and you are not to go away and deride this Institution.'

Remember that advice. But I was virtuous throughout, and my virtue brought its own reward. The parlour of the hotel was full of committees of women; some of them were Methodist Episcopalians, some were Congregationalists, and some were United Presbyterians; and some were faith-healers and Christian Scientists, and all trotted about with note-books in their hands and the expression of Atlas on their faces. They were connected with missions to the heathen, and so forth, and their deliberations appeared to be controlled by a male missionary. The Professor introduced me to one of them as their friend from India.

'Indeed,' said she; 'and of what denomination are you?'

'I—I live in India,' I murmured.

'You are a missionary, then?'

I had obeyed the Professor's orders all too well. 'I am not a missionary,' I said, with, I trust, a decent amount of regret in my tones. She dropped me and I went to

find the Professor, who had cowardly deserted me, and I think was laughing on the balcony. It is very hard to persuade a denominational American that a man from India is not a missionary. The home-returned preachers very naturally convey the impression that India is inhabited solely by missionaries.

I heard some of them talking and saw how, all unconsciously, they were hinting the thing which was not. But prejudice governs me against my will. When a woman looks you in the face and pities you for having to associate with 'heathen' and 'idolaters'—Sikh Sirdars of the North, if you please, Mohammedan gentlemen and the simple-minded Jats of the Punjab—what can you do?

The Professor took me out to see the sights, and lest I should be further treated as a denominational missionary I wrapped myself in tobacco-smoke. This ensures respectful treatment at Chautauqua. An amphitheatre capable of seating five thousand people is the centre-point of the show. Here the lecturers lecture and the concerts are held, and from here the avenues start. Each cottage is decorated according to the taste of the owner, and is full of girls. The verandas are alive with them; they fill the sinuous walks; they hurry from lecture to lecture, hatless, and three under one sunshade; they retail little confidences walking arm in arm; they giggle for all the world like uneducated maidens, and they walk about and row on the lake with their very young men. The lectures are arranged to suit all tastes. I got hold of one called 'The Eschatology of Our Saviour.' It set itself to prove the length, breadth, and temperature of Hell from information

garnered from the New Testament. I read it in the sunshine under the trees, with these hundreds of pretty maidens pretending to be busy all round; and it did not seem to match the landscape. Then I studied the faces of the crowd. One-quarter were old and worn; the balance were young, innocent, charming, and frivolous. I wondered how much they really knew or cared for the art side of Greek life, or the Pope in the Middle Ages; and how much for the young men who walked with them. Also what their ideas of Hell might be. We entered a place called a Museum (all the shows here are of an improving tendency), which had evidently been brought together by feminine hands, so jumbled were the exhibits. There was a facsimile of the Rosetta Stone, with some printed popular information; an Egyptian camel saddle, miscellaneous truck from the Holy Land, another model of the same, photographs of Rome, badly blotched drawings of volcanic phenomena, the head of the pike that John Brown took to Harper's Ferry what time his soul went marching on, casts of doubtful value, and views of Chautauqua, all bundled together without the faintest attempt at arrangement, and all very badly labelled.

It was the apotheosis of Popular Information. I told the Professor so, and he said I was an ass, which didn't affect the statement in the least. I have seen museums like Chautauqua before, and well I know what they mean. If you do not understand, read the first part of *Aurora Leigh*. Lectures on the Chautauqua stamp I have heard before. People don't get educated that way. They must dig for it, and cry for it, and sit up o' nights for it; and when they have got it they must

call it by another name or their struggle is of no avail. You can get a degree from this Lawn-Tennis Tabernacle of all the arts and sciences at Chautauqua. Mercifully the students are women-folk, and if they marry the degree is forgotten, and if they become school-teachers they can only instruct young America in the art of mispronouncing his own language. And yet so great is the perversity of the American girl that she can, scorning tennis and the allurements of boating, work herself nearly to death over the skittles of archaeology and foreign tongues, to the sorrow of all her friends.

Late that evening the contemptuous courtesy of the hotel allotted me a room in a cottage of quarter-inch planking, destitute of the most essential articles of toilet furniture. Ten shillings a day was the price of this shelter, for Chautauqua is a paying institution. I heard the Professor next door banging about like a big jack-rabbit in a very small packing-case. Presently he entered, holding between disgusted finger and thumb the butt-end of a candle, his only light, and this in a house that would burn quicker than cardboard if once lighted.

'Isn't it shameful? Isn't it atrocious? A *dák*-bungalow butler wouldn't dare to give me a raw candle to go to bed by. I say, when you describe this hole rend them to pieces. A candle-stump! Give it 'em hot.'

You will remember the Professor's advice to me not long ago. 'Fessor,' said I loftily (my own room was a windowless dog-kennel), 'this is unseemly. We are now in the most civilised country on earth, enjoying the advantages of an Institootion which is the flower



of civilisation of the nineteenth century; and yet you kick up a fuss over being obliged to go to bed by the stump of a candle! Think of the Pope in the Middle Ages. Reflect on the art side of Greek life. Remember the Sabbath day to keep it holy, and get out of this. You're filling two-thirds of my room.'

Apropos of the Sabbath, I have come across some lovely reading which it grieves me that I have not preserved. Chautauqua, you must know, shuts down on Sundays. With awful severity an eminent clergyman has been writing to the papers about the beauties of the system. The stalls that dispense terrible drinks of Moxie, typhoidal milk-shakes and sulphuric-acid-on-lime-bred soda-water are stopped; boating is forbidden; no steamer calls at the jetty, and the nearest railway station is three miles off, and you can't hire a conveyance; the barbers must not shave you, and no milkman or butcher goes his rounds. The reverend gentleman enjoys this (he must wear a beard). I forget his exact words, but they run: 'And thus, thank God, no one can supply himself on the Lord's day with the luxuries or conveniences that he has neglected to procure on Saturday.' Of course, if you happen to linger inside the wicket-gate—verily Chautauqua is a close preserve—over Sunday, you must bow gracefully to the rules of the place. But what are you to do with this frame of mind? The owner of it would send missions to convert the 'heathen,' or would convert you at ten minutes' notice; and yet if you called him a heathen and an idolater he would probably be very much offended.

Oh, my friends, I have been to one source of the river of missionary enterprise, and the waters thereof are bitter—bitter as hate, narrow as the grave! Not now do I wonder that the missionary in the East is at times, to our thinking, a little intolerant, towards beliefs he cannot understand and people he does not appreciate. Rather it is a mystery to me that these delegates of an imperious ecclesiasticism have not a hundred times ere this provoked murder and fire among our wards. If they were true to the iron teachings of Centreville or Petumna or Chunkhaven, whence they came, they would have done so. For Centreville or Smithson or Squeehawken teach the only true creeds in all the world, and to err from their tenets, as laid down by the bishops and the elders, is damnation. How it may be in England at the centres of supply I cannot tell, but shall presently learn. Here in America I am afraid of these grim men of denominations, who know so intimately the will of the Lord and enforce it to the uttermost. Left to themselves they would prayerfully, in all good faith and sincerity, slide gradually, ere a hundred years, from the mental inquisitions which they now work with some success to an institution—be sure it would be an ‘institution’ with a journal of its own—not far different from what the Torquemada ruled aforetime. Does this seem extravagant? I have watched the expression on the men’s faces when they told me that they would rather see their son or daughter dead at their feet than doing such-and-such things—trampling on the grass on a Sunday, or something equally heinous—and I was grateful that the law of man stood between me and their inter-

pretation of the law of God. They would assuredly slay the body for the soul's sake and account it righteousness. And this would befall not in the next generation, perhaps, but in the next, for the very look I saw in a Yusufzai's face at Peshawur when he turned and spat in my tracks I have seen this day at Chautauqua in the face of a preacher. The will was there, but not the power.

The Professor went up the lake on a visit, taking my ticket of admission with him, and I found a child, aged seven, fishing with a worm and a pin, and spent the rest of the afternoon in his company. He was a delightful young citizen, full of information and apparently ignorant of denominations. We caught sunfish and catfish and pickerel together.

The trouble began when I attempted to escape through the wicket on the jetty and let the creeds fight it out among themselves. Without that ticket I could not go, unless I paid five dollars. That was the rule to prevent people cheating.

'You see,' quoth a man in charge, 'you've no idea of the meanness of these people. Why, there was a lady this season—a prominent member of the Baptist connection—we know, but we can't prove it, that she had two of her hired girls in a cellar when the grounds were being canvassed for the annual poll-tax of five dollars a head. So she saved ten dollars. We can't be too careful with this crowd. You've got to produce that ticket as proof that you haven't been living in the grounds for weeks and weeks.'

'For weeks and weeks!' The blue went out of the

sky as he said it. 'But I wouldn't stay here for one week if I could help it,' I answered.

'No more would I,' he said earnestly.

Returned the Professor in a steamer, and him I basely left to make explanations about that ticket, while I returned to Lakewood—the nice hotel without any regulations. I feared that I should be kept in those terrible grounds for the rest of my life.

And it turned out an hour later that the same fear lay upon the Professor also. He arrived heated but exultant, having baffled the combined forces of all the denominations and recovered the five-dollar deposit. 'I wouldn't go inside those gates for anything,' he said. 'I waited on the jetty. What do you think of it all?'

'It has shown me a new side of American life,' I responded. 'I never want to see it again—and I'm awfully sorry for the girls who take it seriously. I suppose the bulk of them don't. They just have a good time. But it would be better——'

'How?'

'If they all got married instead of pumping up interest in a bric-à-brac museum and advertised lectures, and having their names in the papers. One never gets to believe in the proper destiny of woman until one sees a thousand of 'em doing something different. I don't like Chautauqua. There's something wrong with it, and I haven't time to find out where. But it is wrong.'



## THE BOW FLUME CABLE-CAR



## THE BOW FLUME CABLE-CAR

‘SEE THOSE THINGS YONDER?’ He looked in the direction of the Market Street cable-cars which, moved without any visible agency, were conveying the good people of San Francisco to a picnic somewhere across the harbour. The stranger was not more than seven feet high. His face was burnished copper, his hands and beard were fiery red and his eyes a baleful blue. He had thrust his large frame into a suit of black clothes which made no pretensions toward fitting him, and his cheek was distended with plug tobacco. ‘Them cars,’ he said, more to himself than to me, ‘run upon a concealed cable worked by machinery, and that’s what broke our syndicate at Bow Flume. Concealed machinery, no—concealed ropes. Don’t you mix yourself with them. They are ontrustworthy.’

‘These cars work comfortably,’ I ventured. ‘They run over people now and then, but that doesn’t matter.’

‘Certainly not, not in ’Frisco—by no means. It’s different out yonder.’ He waved a palm-leaf fan in the direction of Mission Dolores among the sandhills. Then without a moment’s pause, and in a low and melancholy voice, he continued: ‘Young feller, all patent machinery is a monopoly, and don’t you try to bust it or else it will bust you. ’Bout five years ago I was at Bow Flume—a minin’ town ’way back yonder—beyond the Sacramento. I ran a saloon there with O’Grady—Howlin’ O’Grady, so called on account of the noise he made when intoxicated. I never christened



my saloon any high-soundin' name, but owing to my happy trick of firing out men who was too full of bug-juice and disposed to be promiscuous in their dealin's, the boys called it "The Wake Up an' Git Bar." O'Grady, my partner, was an unreasonable inventor-man. He invented a check on the whisky bar'ls that wasn't no good except lettin' the whisky run off at odd times and shutting down when a man was most thirstiest. I remember half Bow Flume city firing their six-shooters into a cask—and a Bourbon at that—which was refusing to run on account of O'Grady's patent double-check tap. But that wasn't what I started to tell you about—not by a long ways. O'Grady went to 'Frisco when the Bow Flume saloon was booming. He had a good time in 'Frisco, and he came back with a very bad head and no clothes worth talkin' about. He had been jailed most time, but he had investigated the mechanism of these cars yonder—when he wasn't in the cage. He came back with the liquor for the saloon, and the boys whooped round him for half a day, singing songs of glory. "Boys," says O'Grady, when a half of Bow Flume were lying on the floor kissing the cuspidors and singing "'Way Down upon the Swanee River," being full of some new stuff O'Grady had got up from 'Frisco—"Boys," says O'Grady, "I have the makings of a company in me. You know the road from this saloon to Bow Flume is bad and 'most perpendicular." That was the exact state of the case. Bow Flume city was three hundred feet above our saloon. The boys used to roll down and get full, and any that happened to be sober rolled them up again when the time came to get.

## THE BOW FLUME CABLE-CAR

Some dropped into the cañon that way—bad payers mostly. You see, a man held all the hill Bow Flume was built on, and he wanted forty thousand dollars for a forty-five by hundred lot o' ground. So we kept the whisky below and the boys came down for it. The exercise disposed them to thirst. "Boys," says O'Grady, "as you know, I have visited the great metropolis of 'Frisco." Then they had drinks all round for 'Frisco. "And I have been jailed a few while enjoying the sights." Then they had drinks all round for the jail that held O'Grady. "But," he says, "I have a proposal to make." More drinks on account of the proposal. "I have got hold of the idea of those 'Frisco cable cars. Some of the idea I got in 'Frisco. The rest I have invented," says O'Grady. Then they drank all round for the invention.

'I am coming to the point. O'Grady made a company—the drunkest I ever saw—to run a cable-car on the 'Frisco model from the "Wake Up an' Git Saloon" to Bow Flume. The boys put in about four thousand dollars, for Bow Flume was squirting gold then. There's nary shanty there now. O'Grady put in four thousand dollars of his own, and I was roped in for as much. O'Grady desired the concern to represent the resources of Bow Flume. We got a car built in 'Frisco for two thousand dollars, with an elegant bar at one end—nickel-plated fixings and ruby glass.

"The notion was to dispense liquor *en route*. A Bow Flume man could put himself outside two drinks in a minute and a half, the same not being pressed for urgent business. The boys graded the road for love, and we run a rope in a little trough in the middle.

That rope ran swift, and any blame fool that had his foot cut off, fooling in the middle of the road, might ha' found salvation by using our Bow Flume Palace Car. The boys said that was square. O'Grady took the contract for building the engine to wind the rope. He called his show a mule—it was a cross-breed between a threshing-machine and an elevator-ram. I don't think he had followed the 'Frisco patterns. He put all our dollars into that blamed bar-room on the car, knowing what would please the boys best. They didn't care much about the machinery, so long as the bar hummed.

'We charged the boys a dollar a head per trip. One free drink included. That paid—paid like Paradise. They liked the motion. O'Grady was engineer, and another man sort of 'tended to the rope-engine when he wasn't otherwise engaged. Those cable-cars run by gripping on to the rope. You know that. When the grip's off, the car is braked down and stands still. There ought to have been two cars by right—one to run up and the other down. But O'Grady had a blamed invention for reversing the engine, so the cable ran both ways—up to Bow Flume and down to the saloon—the terminus being in front of our door. A man could kick a friend slick from the bar into the car. The boys appreciated that. The Bow Flume Palace Car Company earned twenty on the hundred in three months, besides the profits of the drinks. We might have lasted to this day if O'Grady hadn't tinkered his blamed engine up on top of Bow Flume Hill. The boys complained the show didn't hum sufficient. They required railroad speed. O'Grady ran 'em up and down at fourteen miles an hour; and his latest improvement was to

touch twenty-four. The strain on the brakes was terrible—quite terrible. But every time O'Grady raised the record, the boys gave him a testimonial. 'Twasn't in human nature not to crowd ahead after that. Testimonials demoralise the publickest of men.

'I rode on the car that memorial day. Just as we started with a double load of boys and a razzle-dazzle assortment of drinks, something went *zip* under the car-bottom. We proceeded with velocity. All the prominent members of the company were aboard. "The grip has got snubbed on the rope," says O'Grady quite quietly. "Boys, this will be the biggest smash on record. Something's going to happen." We proceeded at the rate of twenty-four miles an hour till the end of our journey. I don't know what happened there. We could get clear of the rope anyways at the point where it turned round a pulley to start uphill again. We struck—struck the stoop of the "Wake Up an' Git Saloon"—*my* saloon—and the next thing I knew was feeling of my legs under an assortment of matchwood and broken glass, representing liquor and fixtures to the tune of eight thousand. The car had been flicked through the saloon, bringing down the entire roof on the floor. It had then bucked out into the firmament, describing a parabola over the bluff at the back of the saloon, and was lying at the foot of that bluff, three hundred feet below, like a busted kaleidoscope—all nickel, shavings and bits of red glass. O'Grady and most of the prominent members of the company were dead—very dead—and there wasn't enough left of the saloon to pay for a drink. I took in the situation lying on my stomach at the edge of the bluff, and I

suspicioned that any law-suits that might arise would be complicated by shooting. So I quit Bow Flume by the back trail. I guess the coroner judged that there were no summons—leastways I never heard any more about it. Since that time I've had a distrust to cable-cars. The rope breaking is no great odds, bekaze you can stop the car, but it's getting the grip tangled with the running rope that spreads ruin and desolation over thriving communities and prevents the development of local resources.'

IN PARTIBUS



## IN PARTIBUS

**T**HE 'BUSES RUN to Battersea,  
The 'buses run to Bow,  
The 'buses run to Westbourne Grove,  
And Notting Hill also;  
But I am sick of London Town,  
From Shepherd's Bush to Bow.

I see the smut upon my cuff,  
And feel him on my nose;  
I cannot leave my window wide  
When gentle Zephyr blows,  
Because he brings disgusting things  
And drops 'em on my 'clo'es.'

The sky, a greasy soup-tureen,  
Shuts down atop my brow.  
Yes, I have sighed for London Town  
And I have got it now:  
And half of it is fog and filth,  
And half is fog and row.

And when I take my nightly prowl,  
'Tis passing good to meet  
The pious Briton lugging home  
His wife and daughter sweet,  
Through four packed miles of seething vice,  
Thrust out upon the street.



## ABAF THE FUNNEL

Earth holds no horror like to this  
In any land displayed,  
From Suez unto Sandy Hook,  
From Calais to Port Said;  
And 'twas to hide their heathendom  
The beastly fog was made.

I cannot tell when dawn is near,  
Or when the day is done,  
Because I always see the gas  
And never see the sun,  
And now, methinks, I do not care  
A cuss for either one.

But stay, there was an orange, or  
An aged egg its yolk;  
It might have been a Pears' balloon  
Or Barnum's latest joke:  
I took it for the sun and wept  
To watch it through the smoke.

It's Oh to see the morn ablaze  
Above the mango-tope,  
When homeward through the dewy cane  
The little jackals lope,  
And half Bengal heaves into view,  
New-washed—with sunlight soap.

It's Oh for one deep whisky-peg  
When Christmas winds are blowing,

IN PARTIBUS

When all the men you ever knew,  
And all you've ceased from knowing,  
Are 'entered for the Tournament,  
And everything that's going.'

But I consort with long-haired things  
In velvet collar-rolls,  
Who talk about the Aims of Art  
And 'theories' and 'goals,'  
And moo and coo with womenfolk  
About their blessed souls.

But that they call 'psychology'  
Is lack of liver-pill,  
And all that blights their tender souls  
Is eating till they're ill,  
And their chief way of winning goals  
Consists of sitting still.

It's Oh to meet an Army man,  
Set up, and trimmed and taut,  
Who does not spout hashed libraries  
Or think the next man's thought,  
And walks as though he owned himself,  
And hogs his bristles short.

Hear now a voice across the seas  
To kin beyond my ken,  
If ye have ever filled an hour  
With stories from my pen,

ABAF THE FUNNEL

For pity's sake send some one here  
To bring me news of men!

*The 'buses run to Islington,  
To Highgate and Soho,  
To Hammersmith and Kew therewith,  
And Camberwell also,  
But I can only murmur 'Bus!' <sup>1</sup>  
From Shepherd's Bush to Bow.*

<sup>1</sup> Enough!

## LETTERS ON LEAVE



## LETTERS ON LEAVE

### I

To Lieutenant John McHail,  
151st (Kumharsen) P.N.I.,  
Hakaiti *via* Tharanda,  
Assam.

**D**EAR OLD MAN: Your handwriting is worse than ever, but as far as I can see among the loops and fish-hooks, you are lonesome and want to be comforted with a letter. I knew you wouldn't write to me unless you needed something. You don't tell me that you have left your Regiment, but from what you say about 'my battalion,' 'my men,' and so forth, it seems as if you were raising Military Police for the benefit of the Chins. If that's the case, I congratulate you. The pay is good. Oules writes to me from some new Fort something-or-other, saying that he has struggled into a billet of Rs.700 (Military Police), and instead of being chased by writters as he used to be, is ravaging the country round Shillong in search of a wife. I am very sorry for the Mrs. Oules of the future.

That doesn't matter. You probably know more about the boys yonder than I do. If you'll only send me from time to time some records of their movements I'll try to tell you of things on this side of the water. You say: 'You don't know what it is to hear from Town.' I say: 'You don't know what it is to hear from the country.' Now and again men drift in with

news, but I don't like hot-weather news. It's all of the domestic-occurrence kind. Old 'Hat' Constable came to see me the other day. You remember the click in his throat before he begins to speak. He sat still, clicking at quarter-hour intervals, and after each click he'd say: 'D'ye remember Mistress So-an'-so? Well, she's dead o' typhoid at Naogong.' When it wasn't 'Mistress So-an'-so' it was a man. I stood four clicks and four deaths, and then I asked him to spare me the rest. You seem to have had a bad season, taking it all round, and the women seem to have suffered most. Is that so?

We don't die in London. We go out of Town, and we make as much fuss about it as if we were going to the Neva. Now I understand why the transport is the first thing to break down when our Army takes the field. The Englishman is cumbrous in his movements and very particular about his baskets and hampers and trunks—not less than seven of each—for a fifty-mile journey. Leave season began some weeks ago, and there is a *burra-choop* [big silence] along the streets that you could shovel with a spade. All the people that say they are everybody have gone—quite two hundred miles away. Some of 'em are even on the Continent—and the clubs are full of strange folk. I found a Reform man at the Savage a week ago. He didn't say what his business was, but he was dusty and looked hungry. I suppose he had come in for food and shelter.

Like the rest I'm on leave too. I converted myself into a Government Secretary, awarded myself one month on full pay with the chance of an extension, and went off. Then it rained and hailed, and rained again, and I ran up and down this tiny country in

trains trying to find a dry place. After ten days I came back to Town, having been stopped by the sea four times. I was rather like a kitten at the bottom of a bucket chasing its own tail. So I'm sitting here under a grey, muggy sky wondering what sort of time they are having at Simla. It's August now. The Rains would be nearly over, all the theatricals would be in full swing, and Jakko Hill would be just Paradise. You're probably pink with prickly heat. Sit down quietly under the punkah and think of Umballa station hot as an oven at four in the morning. Think of the *dák-gharri* slobbering in the wet, and the first little cold wind that comes round the first corner after the tonga is clear of Kalka. There's a wind you and I know well. It's blowing over the grass at Dagshai this very moment, and there's a smell of hot fir-trees all along and along from Solon to Simla, and some happy man is flying up that road with fragments of a tonga-bar in his eye, his pet terrier under his arm, his thick clothes on the back seat and the certainty of a month's pure joy in front of him. Instead of which you're being stewed at Hakaiti and I'm sitting in a second-hand atmosphere above a sausage-shop, watching three sparrows playing in a dirty-green tree and pretending that it's summer. I have a view of very many streets and a river. Except the advertisements on the walls, there isn't one speck of colour as far as my eye can reach. The very cat, who is an amiable beast, comes off black under my hand, and I daren't open the window for fear of smuts. And this is better than a soaked and sobbled country, with the corn-shocks standing like plovers' eggs in green moss and the oats lying flat in



moist lumps. We haven't had any summer, and yesterday I smelt the raw touch of the winter. Just one little whiff to show that the year had turned. 'Oh, what a happy land is England!'

I cannot understand the white man at home. You remember when we went out together and landed at the Apollo Bunder with all our sorrows before us, and went to Watson's Hotel and saw the snake-charmers? You said: 'It'll take me all my lifetime to distinguish one nigger from another.' That was eight years ago. Now you don't call them niggers any more, and you're supposed—quite wrongly—to have an insight into native character, or else you would never have been allowed to recruit for the Kumharsens. I feel as I felt at Watson's. The white men are so deathlily alike, especially the more educated. They all seem to read the same books, and the same newspapers telling 'em what to admire in the same books, and they all quote the same passages from the same books, and they write books on books about somebody else's books, and they are penetrated to their boot-heels with a sense of the awful seriousness of their own views of the moment. Above that they seem to be, most curiously and beyond the right of ordinary people, divorced from the knowledge or fear of death. Of course, every man conceives that every man except himself is bound to die (you remember how Hallatt spoke the night before he went out), but these men appear to be like children in that respect.

I can't explain exactly, but it gives an air of unreality to their most earnest earnestnesses; and when a young man of views and culture and aspirations is in

earnest, the trumpets of Jericho are silent beside him. Because they have everything done for them they know how everything ought to be done; and they are perfectly certain that wood pavements, policemen, shops, and gaslight come in the regular course of nature. You can guess with these conviction; how thoroughly and cocksurely they handle little trifles like colonial administration, the wants of the Army, municipal sewage, housing of the poor, and so forth. Every third common need of average men is, in their mouths, a tendency or a movement or a federation affecting the world. It never seems to occur to 'em that the human instinct of getting as much as possible for money paid, or, failing money, for threats and fawnings, is about as old as Cain; and the burden of their talk is: 'Me an' a few mates o' mine are going to make a new world.'

As long as men only write and talk they must think that way, I suppose. It's compensation for playing with little things. And that reminds me. Do you know the University smile? You don't by that name, but sometimes young Civilians wear it for a very short time when they first come out. Something—I wonder if it's our brutal chaff, or a billiard-cue, or which?—takes it out of their faces, and when they next differ with you they do so without smiling. But that smile flourishes in London. I've met it again and again. It expresses tempered grief, sorrow at your complete inability to march with the march of progress at the Universities, and a chastened contempt. There is one man who wears it as a garment. He is frivolously young—not more than thirty-five or forty—and all these years

no one has removed that smile. He knows everything about everything on this earth, and above all he knows all about men under any and every condition of life. He knows all about the aggressive militarism of you and your friends; he isn't quite sure of the necessity of an Army; he is certain that colonial expansion is nonsense; and he is more than certain that the whole step of all our Empire must be regulated by the knowledge and foresight of the working man. Then he smiles—smiles like a seraph with an M.A. degree. What can you do with a man like that? He has never seen an unmade road in his life; I think he believes that wheat grows on a tree and that beef is dug from a mine. He has never been forty miles from a railway, and he has never been called upon to issue an order to anybody except his well-fed servants. Isn't it wondrous? And there are battalions and brigades of these men in Town removed from the fear of want, living until they are seventy or eighty, sheltered, fed, drained, and administered, expending their vast leisure in talking and writing.

But the real fun begins much lower down the line. I've been associating generally and very particularly with the men who say that they are the only men in the world who work—and they call themselves *the* working man. Now the working man in America is a nice person. He says he is a man and behaves accordingly. That is to say, he has some notion that he is part and parcel of a great country. At least, he talks that way. But in this town you can see thousands of men meeting publicly on Sundays to cry aloud that everybody may hear that they are poor, downtrodden helots

—in fact, ‘the pore workin’ man.’ At their clubs and pubs the talk is the same. It’s the utter want of self-respect that revolts. My friend the tobacconist has a cousin, who is, apparently, sound in mind and limb, aged twenty-three, clear-eyed and upstanding. He is a ‘skibbo’ by trade—a painter of sorts. He married at twenty and he has two children. He can spend three-quarters of an hour talking about his downtrodden condition. He works under another man, who has saved money and started a little shop of his own. He hates that man; he loathes the Police; and his views on the lives and customs of the aristocracy are strange. He approves of every form of lawlessness, and he knows that everybody who holds authority is sure to be making a good thing out of it. Of himself as a citizen he never thinks. Of himself as an Ishmael he thinks a good deal. He is entitled to eight hours’ work a day and some time off—said to be paid for; he is entitled to free education for his children—and he doesn’t want no bloomin’ clergyman to teach ’em; he is entitled to houses especially built for himself because he pays the bulk of the taxes of the country. He is not going to emigrate, not he; he reserves to himself the right of multiplying as much as he pleases; the streets must be policed for him while he demonstrates, immediately under my window, by the way, for ten consecutive hours, and I am probably a thief because my clothes are better than his. The proposition is a very simple one. He has no duties to the State, no personal responsibility of any kind, and he’d sooner see his children dead than soldiers of the Queen. The Government owes him everything because he is a ‘pore workin’

man.' When the Guards tried their Board-School mutiny at the Wellington Barracks my friend was jubilant. 'What did I tell you?' he said. 'You see the very soldiers won't stand it.'

'What's *it*?'

'Bein' treated like machines instead of flesh and blood. 'Course they won't.'

The popular evening paper wrote that the Guards, with perfect justice, had rebelled against being treated like machines instead of flesh and blood. Then I thought of a certain regiment that lay in Mian Mir for three years and dropped four hundred men out of a thousand. It died of fever and cholera. There were no pretty nursemaids to walk with it in the streets, because there were no streets. I saw how the Guards amused themselves and how their sergeants smoked in uniform. I pitied the Guards with their cruel sentry-goes, their three nights out of bed, and their unlimited supply of love and liquor.

Another man, not a working man, told me that the Guards' riot—it's impossible, as you know, to call this kick-up of the fatted flunkies of the Army a mutiny—was only 'a schoolboys' prank'; and he could not see that if it was what he said it was, the Guards were no regiment and should have been wiped out decently and quietly. There again the futility of a sheltered people cropped up. You mustn't treat a man like a machine in this country, but you can't get any work out of a man till he has learned to work like a machine. D— has just come home for a few months from the charge of a mountain battery on the Frontier. He used to begin work at eight, and he was thankful if he got

off at six; most of the time on his feet. When he went to the Black Mountains he was extensively engaged for nearly sixteen hours a day; and that on food at which the 'pore workin' man' would have turned up his State-lifted nose. D—— on the subject of labour as understood by the white man in his own home is worth hearing. Though coarse—considerably coarse! But D—— doesn't know all the hopeless misery of the business. When the small pig, oyster, furniture, carpet, builder or general shopman works his way out of the ruck he turns round and makes his old friends and employees sweat. He knows how near he can go to flaying 'em alive before they kick; and in this matter he is neither better nor worse than a grain-dealer or a native officer of our own blessed country. It's the small employer of labour that skins his servant, exactly as the forty-pound householder works her one white servant to the bone and goes to drop pennies into the plate to convert the heathen in the East.

Just at present, as you have read, the person who calls himself the pore workin' man—the man I saw kicking fallen men in the mud by the Docks last winter—has discovered a real, fine, new original notion; and he is working it for all he is worth. He calls it the solidarity of labour; but it's caste—four thousand years old, caste of Manu—with guild tolls, excommunication and all the rest of it. All things considered, there isn't anything much older than caste—it began with the second generation of man on earth—but to read the 'advanced' papers on the subject you'd imagine it was a revelation from Heaven. The real fun will begin—as it has begun and ended many times before—when the

caste of skilled labour—that's the pore workin' man—are pushed up and knocked about by the lower and unrecognised castes, who will form castes of their own and outcaste on the decision of their own committees. How these castes will scuffle and fight among themselves, and how astonished the Englishman will be!

He is naturally lawless because he is a fighting animal; and his amazingly sheltered condition has made him inconsequent. I don't like inconsequent lawlessness. I've seen it down at Bow Street, at the Docks, by the G.P.O., and elsewhere. Its chief home, of course, is in that queer place called the House of Commons, but no one goes there who isn't forced by business. It's shut up at present, and the persons who belong to it are loose all over the face of the country. I don't think—but I won't swear—that any of them are spitting at policemen. One man appears to have been poaching, others are advocating various forms of murder and outrage—and nobody seems to care. The residue talk—just Heavens, how they talk, and what wonderful fictions they tell! And they firmly believe, being ignorant of the mechanism of government, that they administer the country. In addition, certain of their newspapers have elaborately worked up a famine in Ireland that could be engineered by two Deputy-Commissioners and four average 'Stunts, into a 'woe' and a 'calamity' that is going to overshadow the peace of the nation—even of the Empire. I suppose they have their own sense of proportion, but they manage to keep it to themselves very successfully. What do you, who have seen half a countryside in deadly fear of its life, suppose that this people would do if they

were sweated and frightened? If they really knew what the fear of death and the dread of injury implied? If they died very swiftly indeed, and could not count on their futile lives enduring beyond next sundown? Some of the men from your—I mean our—part of the world say that they would be afraid and break and scatter and run. But there is no room in the island to run. The sea catches you, mid-waist, at the third step. I am curious to see if the cholera, of which these people stand in most lively dread, gets a firm foothold in London. In that case I have a notion that there will be scenes and panics. They live too well here, and have too much to make life worth clinging to—club, and shop-fronts, and gas, and theatres and so forth—things that they affect to despise, and whereon and whereby they live like leeches. But I have written enough. It doesn't exhaust the subject; but you won't be grateful for other epistles. De Vitré of the Poona Irregular Moguls will have it that they are a tiddy-iddy people. He says that all their visible use is to produce loans for the colonies, and men to be used up in developing India. I honestly believe that the average Englishman would faint if you told him it was lawful to use up human life for any purpose whatever. He believes that it has to be developed and made beautiful for the possessor, and in that belief talkatively perpetrates cruelties that would make Torquemada jump in his grave. Go to Alipur if you want to see. I am off to foreign parts—forty miles away—to catch fish for my friend the char-cat; also to shoot a little bird if I have luck.

Yours,

RUDYARD KIPLING.



II

To Captain J. McHail,  
151st (Kumharsen) P.N.I.,  
Hakaiti *via* Tharanda,  
Assam.

CAPTAIN SAHIB BAHADUR! The last *Pi* gives me news of your step, and I'm more pleased about it than many. You've been 'cavalry quick' in your promotion. Eight years and your company! *Allahu!* But it must have been that long, lean horse-head of yours that looks so wise and says so little that has imposed upon the authorities. My best congratulations. Let out your belt two holes, and be happy, as I am not.

Did I tell you in my last about going to Woking in search of a grave? The dust and the grime and the grey and the sausage-shop told on my spirits to such an extent that I solemnly took a train and went grave-hunting through the Necropolis—locally called the Necropolis. I wanted an eligible, entirely detached site in a commanding position—six by three and bricked throughout. I found it, but the only drawback was that I must go back to Town to the head office to buy it. One doesn't go to Town to haggle for tomb-space, so I deferred the matter and went fishing. All the same, there are very nice graves at Woking, and I shall keep my eye on one of 'em.

Since that date I seem to have been in four or five places, because there are labels on the bag. One of the places was Plymouth, where I found half a regiment at field exercises on the Hoe. They were practising the

attack in three lines with the mixed rush at the end, even as it is laid down in the drill-book, and they charged subduedly across the Hoe. The people laughed. I was much more inclined to cry. Except the Major, there didn't seem to be anything more than twenty years old in the regiment; and oh! but it was pink and white and chubby and undersized—just made to die succulently of disease. I fancied that some of our battalions out with you were more or less young and exposed, but a Home battalion is a crèche, and it scares one to watch it. Eminent and distinguished Generals get up after dinner—I've listened to two of 'em—and explain that though the Home battalion can only be regarded as a feeder to the Foreign, yet all our battalions can be regarded as efficient; and if they aren't efficient we shall find in our military reserve the nucleus—how I loathe that lying word!—of the Lord knows what, but the speeches always end with allusions to the spirit of the English, their glorious past, and the certainty that when the hour of need comes the nation will 'emerge victorious.' If the Engineer of the Hungerford Bridge told the South-Eastern Railway that because a main girder had stood for thirty years without need of renewal it was therefore sure to stand for another fifty, he would probably get the sack. Our military authorities don't get the sack. They are allowed to make speeches in public. Some day, if we live long enough, we shall see the glories of the past and the 'sublime instinct of an ancient people' without one complete army corps, pitted against a few unsentimental long-range guns and some efficiently organised troops. Then the band will begin to play, and

it will not play *Rule Britannia* until it has played some funny tunes first.

Do you remember Tighe? He was in the Deccan Lancers and retired because he got married. He is in Ireland now, and I met him the other day, idle, unhappy, and dying for some work to do. Mrs. Tighe is equally miserable. She wants to go back to Poona instead of administering a big barrack of a house somewhere at the back of a fog. I quote Tighe here. He has, you may remember, a pretty tongue about him, and he was describing to me at length how a Home regiment behaves when it is solemnly turned out for a week or a month training under canvas:—

‘About four in the mornin’, me dear boy, they begin pitchin’ their tents for the next day—four hours to pitch it, and the tent-ropes a howlin’ tangle when all’s said and sworn. Then they tie their horses with strings to their big toes and go to bed in hollows and caves in the earth till the rain falls and the tents are flooded, and then, me dear boy, the men and the horses and the ropes and the vegetation of the country cuddle each other till the morning for company’s sake. The next day it all begins again. Just when they are beginning to understand how to camp they are all put back into their boxes, and half of ’em have lung disease.’

But what is the use of snarling and grumbling? The matter will adjust itself later on, and the one nation on earth that talks and thinks most of the sanctity of human life will be a little astonished at the waste of life for which it will be responsible. In those days, my Captain, the men who can command seasoned troops and have made the best use of those troops will be

sought after and petted and will rise to honour. Remember the Hakaiti when next you measure the naked recruit.

Let us revisit calmer scenes. I've been down for three perfect days to the seaside. Don't you remember what a really fine day means? A milk-white sea, as smooth as glass, with blue-white heat-haze hanging over it, one little wave talking to itself on the sand, warm shingle, four bathing-machines, cliff in the background, and half the babies in Christendom paddling and yelling. It was a queer little place, just near enough to the main line of traffic to be overlooked from morning till night. There was a baby—an Ollendorfian baby—with whom I fell madly in love. She lived down at the bottom of a great white sun-bonnet; talked French and English in a clear bell-like voice, and of such, I fervently hope, will the Kingdom of Heaven be. When she found that my French wasn't equal to hers she condescendingly talked English and bade me build her houses of stones and draw cats for her through half the day. After I had done everything that she ordered she went off to talk to some one else. The beach belonged to that baby, and every soul on it was her servant, for I know that we rose with shouts when she paddled into three inches of water and sat down, gasping: '*Mon Dieu! Je suis morte!*' I know you like the little ones, so I don't apologise for yarning about them. She had a sister aged seven and one-half—a lovely child, without a scrap of self-consciousness, and enormous eyes. Here comes a real tragedy. The girl—and her name was Violet—had fallen wildly in love with a little fellow

of nine. They used to walk up the single street of the village with their arms around each other's necks. Naturally, she did all the little wooings, and Hugh submitted quietly. Then devotion began to pall, and he didn't care to paddle with Violet. Hereupon, as far as I can gather, she smote him on the head and threw him against a wall. Anyhow, it was very sweet and natural, and Hugh told me about it when I came down. 'She's so unrulable,' he said. 'I didn't hit her back, but I was very angry.' Of course, Violet repented, but Hugh grew suspicious, and at the psychological moment there came down from Town a destroyer of delights and a separator of companions in the shape of a tricycle. Also there were many little boys on the beach—rude, shouting, romping little chaps—who said, 'Come along!' 'Hullo!' and used the wicked word 'beastly!' Among these Hugh became a person of importance and began to realise that he was a man who could say 'beastly' and 'Come on!' with the best of 'em. He preferred to run about with the little boys on wars or expeditions, and he wriggled away when Violet put her arm around his waist. Violet was hurt and angry, and I think she slapped Hugh. Relations were strained when I arrived because one morning Violet, after asking permission, invited Hugh to come to lunch. And that bad, Spanish-eyed boy deliberately filled his bucket with the cold sea-water and dashed it over Violet's pink ankles. (Joking apart, this seems to be about the best way of refusing an invitation that civilisation can invent. Try it on your Colonel.) She was madly angry for a moment, and then she said: 'Let me carry you up the beach, 'cause

of the shingles in your toes.' This was divine, but it didn't move Hugh, and Violet went off to her mother. She sat down with her chin in her hand, looking out at the sea for a long time very sorrowfully. Then she said, and it was her first experience: 'I know that Hugh cares more for his horrid tricycle than he does for me, and if he said he didn't I wouldn't believe him.'

Up to date Hugh has said nothing. He is running about playing with the bold, bad little boys, and Violet is sitting on a breakwater, trying to find out why things are as they are. It's a nice tale, and tales are scarce these days. Have you noticed how small and elemental is the stock of them at the world's disposal? Men forgathered at that little seaside place, and, manlike, exchanged stories. They were all the same stories. One had heard 'em in the East with Eastern variations, and in the West with Western extravagances tacked on. Only one thing seemed new, and it was merely a phrase used by a groom in speaking of an ill-conditioned horse: 'No, sir; he's not ill in a manner o' speaking, but he's so to speak generally unfriendly with his innards as a usual thing.'

I entrust this to you as a sacred gift. See that it takes root in the land. 'Unfriendly with his innards as a usual thing.' Remember. It's better than laboured explanations in the Rains. And I fancy it's new.

And now. But I had nearly forgotten. We're a nation of grumblers, and that's why other people call Anglo-Indians bores. I write feelingly because M——, just home on long leave, has for the second time sat on my devoted head for two hours simply and solely for the purpose of swearing at the Accountant-General.

He has given me the whole history of his pay, prospects and promotion twice over, and in case I should misunderstand wants me to dine with him and hear it all for the third time. If M—— would leave the A.-G. alone he is a delightful man, as we all know; but he's loose in London now, buttonholing English friends and quoting leave and pay codes to them. He wants to see a Member of Parliament about something or other, and I believe he spends his nights rolled up in a quilt on the stairs of the India Office waiting to catch a secretary. I like the India Office. They are so beautifully casual and lazy, and their rooms look out over St. James's Park, and they are never tired of admiring the view. Now and then a man comes in to report himself, and the secretaries and the under-secretaries and the messengers play battledore and shuttlecock with him until they are tired.

Some time since, when I was better, more serious and earnest than I am now, I preached a holy war up and down those echoing corridors, and suggested the abolition of the India Office and the purchase of a four-pound-ten American revolving bookcase to hold all the documents on India that were of public value or could be comprehended by the public. Now I am more frivolous because I am dropping gently into the grave at Woking; and yet I believe in the bookcase. India is bowed down with too much office as it is, and the House of Correction, Revision, Division, and Supervision cannot do her much good. I saw a committee or a council file in the other day. Only one desirable tale came to me out of that Office. If you've heard it before stop me. It began with a cutting from

an obscure Welsh paper, I think. A man—a gardener—went mad, announced that the Secretary of State for India was the Messiah, and burned himself alive on a pile of garden refuse. That's the first part. I never could get at the second, but I am credibly informed that the work of the India Office stood still for three weeks, while the entire Staff took counsel how to break the news to the Secretary of State. I believe it still remains unbroken.

Decidedly, leave in England is a disappointing thing. I've wandered into two stations since I wrote the last. Nothing but the labels on the bag remain—oh, and a memory of a weighing-in at an East End fishing club. That was an experience. I forgathered with a man on the top of a bus, and we became friends because we both agreed that gorge-tackle for pike was only permissible in very weedy streams. He repeated his views, which were my views, nearly ten times, and in the evening invited me to this weighing-in, at, we'll say, the rooms of the Lea and Chertsey Piscatorial Anglers' Benevolent Brotherhood. We assembled in a room at the top of a public-house, the walls ornamented with stuffed fish and water-birds, and the anglers came in by twos and threes, and I was introduced to all of 'em as 'the gen'leman I met just now.' This seemed to be good enough for all practical purposes. There were ten- and five-shilling prizes, and the affable and energetic clerk of the scales behaved as though he were weighing-in for the Lucknow races. The take of the day was one pound fifteen ounces of dace and roach, about twenty fingerlings, and the



winner, who is in charge of a railway bookstall, described minutely how he caught each fish. As a matter of fact, roach-fishing in the Lea and Thames is a fine art. Then there were drinks—modest little drinks—and they called upon me for a sentiment. You know how things go at the sergeants' messes and some of the Lodges? In a moment of brilliant inspiration I gave 'free fishing in the Parks' and brought down the whole house. Free fishing for coarse fish in the Serpentine and the St. James's Park water would hurt nobody and do a great deal of good to many. The stocking of the water—but what does this interest you? The Englishman moves slowly. He is just beginning to understand that it is not sufficient to set apart a certain amount of land for a lung of London and to turn people into it with 'There, get along and play,' unless he gives 'em something to play with. Thirty years hence he will almost allow cafés and hired bands in Hyde Park.

To return for a moment to the fish club. I got away at eleven, and in darkness and despair had to make my way west for leagues and leagues across London. I was on the Mile End Road at midnight, and there lost myself, and learned something more about the policeman. He is haughty in the East and always afraid that he is being chaffed. I honestly only wanted sailing directions to get homeward. One policeman said: 'Get along. You know your way as well as I do.' And yet another: 'You go back to the country where you comed from. You ain't doin' no good 'ere!' It was so deadly true that I couldn't answer back, and there wasn't an expensive cab handy to prove my virtue

## LETTERS ON LEAVE

and respectability. Next time I visit the Lea and Chertsey Affabilities I'll find out something about trains. Meantime I keep holiday dolefully. There is not anybody to play with me. They have all gone away to their own places. Even The Infant, who is generally the idlest man in the world, writes me that he is helping to steer a ten-ton yacht in Scottish seas. When she heels over too much The Infant is driven to the O.P. side and she rights herself. The Infant's host says: 'Isn't this bracing? Isn't this delightful?' And The Infant, who lives in dread of a chill bringing back his Indian fever, has to say 'Ye-es,' and pretend to despise overcoats.

*Wallah!* This is a cheerful world.

RUDYARD KIPLING.



## THE ADORATION OF THE MAGE



## THE ADORATION OF THE MAGE

THIS IS A SLIM, THIN LITTLE STORY, but it serves to explain a great many things. I picked it up in a four-wheeler in the company of an eminent novelist, a pink-eyed young gentleman who lived on his income, and a gentleman who knew more than he ought; and I preserved it, thinking it would serve to interest you. It may be an old story, but the G.W.K.M.T.H.O., whom, for the sake of brevity, we will call Captain Kydd, declared that his best friend had heard it himself. Consequently, I doubted its newness more than ever. For when a man raises his voice and vows that the incident occurred opposite his own Club window, all the listening world know that they are about to hear what is vulgarly called a cracker. This rule holds good in London as well as in Lahore. When we left the house of the highly distinguished politician who had been entertaining us, we stepped into a London Particular, which had nothing whatever to do with the story, but was interesting from the little fact that we could not see our hands before our faces. The black, brutal fog had turned each gas-jet into a pin-prick of light, visible only at six inches' range. There were no houses, there were no pavements. There were no points of the compass. There were only the eminent novelist, the young gentleman with the pink eyes, Captain Kydd and myself, holding each other's shoulders in the gloom of Tophet. Then the eminent novelist delivered himself of an epigram.

'Let's go home,' said he.

'Let us try,' said Captain Kydd, and incontinently fell down an area into somebody's kitchen-yard and disappeared into chaos. When he had climbed out again we heard a thing on wheels swearing even worse than Captain Kydd was, all among the railings of a square. So we shouted, and presently a four-wheeler drove gracefully on to the pavement.

'I'm trying to get 'ome,' said the cabby. 'But if you gents make it worth while . . . though Heaven knows 'ow we ever shall. 'Arf a crown apiece might . . . and any'ow I won't promise anywheres in particular.'

The cabby kept his word nobly. He did not find anywheres in particular, but he found several other places. First he discovered a pavement-kerb and drove pressing his wheel against it till we came to a lamp-post, and that we hit grievously. Then he came to what ought to have been a corner, but was a bus, and we embraced the thing amid terrific language. Then he sailed out into nothing at all—blank fog—and there he commended himself to Heaven and his horse to the other place, while the eminent novelist put his head out of the window and gave directions. I begin to understand now why the eminent novelist's villains are so lifelike and his plots so obscure. He has a marvellous breadth of speech, but no ingenuity in directing the course of events. We drove into the island of refuge near the Brompton Oratory just when he was telling the cabby to be sure and avoid the Regent's Park Canal.

Then we began to talk about the weather and Mister Gladstone. If an Englishman is unhappy he always

talks about Mister Gladstone in terms of reproof. The eminent novelist was a socialistic Neo-Plastic-Unionistic-Demagoglot Radical of the Extreme Left, and that is the latest novelty of the thing yet invented. He withdrew his head to answer Captain Kydd's arguments, which were forcible. 'Well, you'll admit he's all sorts of a madman,' said Captain Kydd sweetly.

'He's a saint,' said the eminent novelist, 'and he moves in an atmosphere that you and those like you cannot breathe.'

'Yes, I always said it was a pretty thick fog. Now I know it's as thick as this one. I say, we're on the pavement again; we shall be in a shop in a minute,' said Captain Kydd.

But I wanted to see the eminent novelist fight, so I reintroduced Mister Gladstone while the cab crawled up a wall.

'It's not exactly a wholesome atmosphere,' said Captain Kydd when the novelist had finished speaking. 'That reminds me of a story—perfectly true story. In the old days, before Mister Gladstone went off his chump—'

'Yah-h-h!' said the eminent novelist, wrapping himself in his Inverness.

'—went off his nut, he used to consort a good deal with his friends on his own side—visit 'em, y'know, and deliver addresses out of their own bedroom windows, and steal their postcards, and generally be friendly. Well, one man he stayed with had a house, a country-house, y'know, and in the garden there was a path which was supposed to divide Kent and Surrey or some counties. They led the old man forth for his



walk, y'know, and followed him in gangs to hear that the weather was fine, and of course his host pointed out the path. I daresay they had strewn rose-leaves on it, or spread it with homespun trousers. Anyhow, the old man took in the situation, and put one leg on one side of the path and the other on the other, and with one of those wonderful flashes of humour that come to him when he chooses to frisk among his friends, he said: "Now I am in Kent and in Surrey at the same time."

Captain Kydd ceased speaking as the cab tried to force a way into the South Kensington Museum.

'Well, what's there in that?' said the eminent novelist.

'Oh, nothing much. Let's see how it goes afterwards. Mrs. Gladstone, who was close behind him, turned round and whispered to the hostess in an ecstatic shriek: "Oh, Mrs. Whateverhername was, you *will* plant a tree there, won't you?"'

'By Jove!' said the young gentleman with the pink eyes.

'I don't believe it,' said the eminent novelist.

I said nothing, but it seemed very likely. Captain Kydd laughed: 'Well, I don't consider that sort of atmosphere exactly wholesome, y'know.'

And when the cab had landed us in the drinking-fountain in High Street, Kensington, and the horse fell down, and the cabby collected our half-crowns and gave us his beery blessing, and I had to grope my way home on foot, it occurred to me that perhaps you might be interested in that anecdote. As I have said, it explains a great deal more than appears at first sight.

## A DEATH IN THE CAMP



## A DEATH IN THE CAMP

TWO AWFUL CATASTROPHES have occurred. One Englishman in London is dead, and I have scandalised about twenty of his nearest and dearest friends.

He was a man nearly seventy years old, engaged in the business of an architect, and immensely respected. That was all I knew about him till I began to circulate among his friends in these parts, trying to cheer them up and make them forget the fog.

'Hush!' said a man and his wife. 'Don't you know he died yesterday of a sudden attack of pneumonia? Isn't it shocking?'

'Yes,' said I vaguely. 'Awf'ly shocking. Has he left his wife provided for?'

'Oh, he's very well off indeed, and his wife is quite old. But just think—it was only in the next street it happened!' Then I saw that their grief was not for Strangeways, deceased, but for themselves.

'How old was he?' I said.

'Nearly seventy, or maybe a little over.'

'About time for a man to rationally expect such a thing as death,' I thought, and went away to another house, where a young married couple lived.

'Isn't it perfectly ghastly?' said the wife. 'Mr. Strangeways died last night.'

'So I heard,' said I. 'Well, he had lived his life.'

'Yes, but it was such a shockingly short illness. Why, only three weeks ago he was walking about the street.' And she looked nervously at her husband, as though

she expected him to give up the ghost at any minute.

Then I gathered, with the knowledge of the length of his sickness, that her grief was not for the late Mr. Strangeways, and went away thinking over men and women I had known who would have given a thousand years in Purgatory for even a week wherein to arrange their affairs, and who were anything but well off.

I passed on to a third house full of children, and the shadow of death hung over their heads, for father and mother were talking of Mr. Strangeways' 'end.' 'Most shocking,' said they. 'It seems that his wife was in the next room when he was dying, and his only son called her, so she just had time to take him in her arms before he died. He was unconscious at the last. Wasn't it awful?'

When I went away from that house I thought of men and women without a week wherein to arrange their affairs, and without any money, who were anything but unconscious at the last, and who would have given a thousand years in Purgatory for one glimpse at their mothers, their wives, or their husbands. I reflected how these people died tended by hirelings and strangers, and I was not in the least ashamed to say that I laughed over Mr. Strangeways' death as I entered the house of a brother in his craft.

'Heard of Strangeways' death?' said he. 'Most hideous thing. Why, he had only a few days before got news of his designs being accepted by the Burgoyne Cathedral. If he had lived he would have been working out the details now—with me.' And I saw that this man's fear also was not on account of Mr. Strange-

## A DEATH IN THE CAMP

ways. And I thought of men and women who had died in the midst of wrecked work; then I sought a company of young men and heard them talk of the dead. 'That's the second death among people I know within the year,' said one. 'Yes, the second death,' said another.

I smiled a very large smile.

'And you know,' said a third, who was the oldest of the party, 'they've opened the new road by the head of Tresillion Road, and the wind blows straight across that level square from the Parks. Everything is changing about us.'

'He was an old man,' I said.

'Ye-es. More than middle-aged,' said they.

'And he outlived his reputation?'

'Oh, no, or how could he have taken the designs for the Burgoyne Cathedral? Why, the very day he died . . .'

'Yes,' said I. 'He died at the end of a completed work—his design finished, his prize awarded?'

'Yes; but he didn't live to . . .'

'And his illness lasted seventeen days, of twenty-four hours each?'

'Yes.'

'And he was tended by his own kith and kin, dying with his head on his wife's breast, his hand in his only son's hand, without any thought of their possible poverty to vex him? Are these things so?'

'Ye-es,' said they. 'Wasn't it shocking?'

'Shocking?' I said. 'Get out of this place. Go forth, run about and see what death really means. You have described such dying as a god might envy and a king

might pay half his ransom to make certain of. Wait till you have seen men—strong men of thirty-five, with little children, die at two days' notice, penniless and alone, and seen it not once, but twenty times; wait till you have seen the young girl die within a fortnight of the wedding; or the lover within three days of his marriage; or the mother—sixty little minutes—before her son can come to her side; wait till you hesitate before handling your daily newspaper for fear of reading of the death of some young man that you have dined with, drank with, shot with, lent money to and borrowed from, and tested to the uttermost—till you dare not hope for the death of an old man, but, when you are strongest, count up the tale of your acquaintances and friends, wondering how many will be alive six months hence. Wait till you have heard men calling in the death-hour on kin that cannot come; till you have dined with a man one night and seen him buried on the next. Then you can begin to whimper about loneliness and change and desolation.' Here I foamed at the mouth.

'And do you mean to say,' drawled a young gentleman, 'that there is any society in which that sort of holocaust goes on?'

'I do,' said I. 'It's not society; it's Life.' And they laughed.

But this is the old tale of Pharaoh's chariot-wheel and flying-fish.

If I tell them yarns, they say: 'How true! How true!' If I try to present the truth, they say: 'What superb imagination!'

But you understand, don't you?

A REALLY GOOD TIME





## A REALLY GOOD TIME

THERE ARE TIMES when one wants to get into pyjamas and stretch and loll, and explain things generally. This is one of those times. It is impossible to stand at ease in London, and the inhabitants are so abominably egotistical that one cannot shout 'I, I, I' for two minutes without another man joining in with 'Me, too!' Which things are an allegory.

The amusement began with a gentleman of infinite erudition offering to publish my autobiography. I was to write a string of legends—he would publish them; and would I forward a cheque for five guineas 'to cover incidental expenses'? To him I explained that I wanted five-guinea cheques myself very much indeed, and that, emboldened by his letter, which gave me a very fair insight into his character, I was even then maturing *his* autobiography, which I hoped to publish before long with illustrations, and would he forward a cheque for five guineas 'to cover incidental expenses'? This brought me an eight-page compilation of contumely. He was grieved to find that he had been mistaken in my character, which he had believed was, at least, elevated. He begged me to remember that the first letter had been written in strictest confidence, and that if I notated one tittle of the said 'repository' he would unkennel the bloodhounds of the Law and hunt me down. An autobiography on the lines that I had 'so flippantly proposed' was libel without benefit of authorship, and I had better lend him two guineas—I.O.U. enclosed—to salve his lacerated feelings. I

replied that I had his autobiography by me in manuscript, and would post it to his address, V.P.P., two guineas and one-half. He evidently knew nothing about the V.P.P., and the correspondence stopped. It is really very hard for an Anglo-Indian to get along in London. Besides, my autobiography is not a thing I should care to make public before extensive Bowdlerisation.

These things, however, only led up to much worse. I dare not grin over them unless I step aside Eastward. I wrote stories, all about little pieces of India, carefully arranged and expurgated for the English public. Then various people began to write about them. One gentleman pointed out that I had taken 'the well-worn themes of passion, love, despair, and fate,' and, thanks to the 'singular fascination' of my style, had 'wrought them into new and glowing fabrics instinct with the eternal vitality of the East.' For three days after this certificate I was almost too proud to speak to the housemaid with the fan-teeth (there is a story about her that I will tell another time). On the fourth day another gentleman made clear that that beautiful style was 'tortuous, elaborated, and inept,' and it was only on account of the 'newness of the subjects handled so crabbedly' that I 'arrested the attention of the public for a day.' Then I wept before the housemaid, and she called me a 'real gentleman' because I gave her a shilling.

Then I tried an all-round cannon—published one thing under one name and another under another, and sat still to watch. A gentleman, who also speaks with authority on Literature and Art, came to me and said:

'I don't deny that there is a great deal of clever and superficial fooling in that last thing of yours in the—I've forgotten what it was called—but do you yourself think that you have that curious, subtle grip on and instinct of matters Oriental that that other man shows in his study of native life?' And he mentioned the name of my Other Self. I bowed my head, and my shoulders shook with repentance and grief. 'No,' said I. 'It's so true,' said he. 'Yes,' said I. 'So feeling,' said he. 'Indeed it is,' said I. 'Such honest work, too!' said he. 'Oh, awful!' said I. 'Think it over,' said he, 'and try to follow his path.' 'I will,' said I. And when he left I danced sarabands with the housemaid of the fan-teeth till she wanted to know whether I had bought 'spirruts.'

Then another man came along and sat on my sofa and hailed me as a brother. 'And I know that we are kindred souls,' said he, 'because I feel sure that you have evolved all the dreamy mystery and curious brutality of the British soldier from the pure realm of fancy.' 'I did,' I said. 'If you went into a barrack-room you would see at once.' 'Faugh!' said he. 'What have we to do with barrack-rooms? The pure air of fancy feeds us both; keep to that. If you are trammelled by the bitter, *borneé* truth, you are lost. You die the death of Zola. Invention is the only test of creation.' 'Of course,' said I. 'Zola's a bold, bad man. Not a patch on *you*.' I hadn't caught his name, but I fancied that would prevent him flinging himself about on my sofa, which is a cheap one. 'I don't say that altogether,' he said. 'He has his strong points. But he is deficient in imaginative constructiveness. *You*, I see

from what you have said, will belong to the Neo-Gynekalistic school.' I knew 'Gyne' meant something about cow-killing, and was prepared to hedge, when he said good-bye and wrote an article about my ways and works, which brought another man to my door spouting foam.

'Great Landor's ghost!' he said. 'What under the stars has possessed you to join the Gynekalistic lot?' 'I haven't,' I said. 'I believe in municipal regulation of slaughter-houses, if there is a strong Deputy-Commissioner to control the Mohammedan butchers, especially in the hot weather, but . . . ' 'This is madness,' said he. 'Your reputation is at stake. You must make it clear to the world that you have nothing whatever to do with the flatulent, unballasted fiction of . . . ' 'Do you suppose the world cares a tuppenny damn?' said I.

Then he raged afresh, and left me, pointing out that the Gynewallahs wrote about nothing but women—which seems rather an unlimited subject—and that I would die the death of a French author whose name I have forgotten. But it wasn't Zola this time.

I asked the housemaid what in the world the Gynekalisthenics were. 'La, sir,' said she, 'it's only their way of being rude. That fat gentleman with the long hair tried to kiss me when I opened the door. I slapped his fat chops for him.'

Now the crisis is at its height. All the entire round world, composed, as far as I can learn, of the Gynekalistic and the anti-Gynekalistic man, and two or three loafers, are trying to find out to what school I rightly belong. They seem to use what they are pleased to call my reputation as a bolster through which to

stab at the foe. One gentleman is proving that I am a bit of a blackguard, probably reduced from the ranks, rather an impostor, and a considerable amount of plagiarist. The other man denies the reduction from the ranks, withholds judgment about the plagiarism, but would like, in the interest of the public—who are at present exclusively occupied with Barnum—to prove it true, and is convinced that my style is 'hermaphroditic.' I have all the money on the first man. He is on the eve of discovering that I stole a dead Tommy's diary just before I was drummed out of the Service for desertion, and have lived on the proceeds ever since. 'Do *yew* know,' as the Private Secretary said at Simla this year, 'it's remarkably hard for an Anglo-Indian to get along in England.'



## ON EXHIBITION





## ON EXHIBITION

IT MAKES ME BLUSH PINK all over to think about it, but, none the less, I have brought the tale to you, confident that you will understand. An invitation to tea arrived at my address. The English are very peculiar people about their tea. They don't seem to understand that it is a function at which any one who is passing down the Mall may present himself. They issue formal cards—just as if tea-drinking were like dancing. My invitation said that I was to tea from 4.30 till 6 P.M., and there was never a word of lawn-tennis on the whole of the card. I knew the English were heavy eaters, but this amazed me. 'What in the wide world,' thought I, 'will they find to do for an hour and a half? Perhaps they'll play games, as it's near Christmas-time. They can't sit out in the veranda, and band-stands are impossible.'

Wherefore I went to this house prepared for anything. There was a fine show of damp wraps in the hall, and a cheerful babble of voices from the other side of the drawing-room door. The hostess ran at me, vehemently shouting: 'Oh, I am so glad you have come. We were all talking about you.' As the room was entirely filled with strangers, chiefly female, I reflected that they couldn't have said anything very bad. Then I was introduced to everybody, and some of the people were talking in couples, and didn't want to be interrupted in the least, and some were behind settees, and some were in difficulty with their tea-cups,

and one and all had exactly the same name. That is the worst of a lisping hostess.

Almost before I had dropped the last limp hand, a burly ruffian, with a beard, rumbled in my ear: 'I trust you were satisfied with my estimate of your powers in last week's *Concertina*?'

Now I don't see the *Concertina* because it's too expensive, but I murmured: 'Immense! immense! Most gratifying. Totally undeserved.' And the ruffian said: 'In a measure, yes. Not wholly. I flatter myself that——'

'Oh, not in the least,' said I. 'No sugar, thanks.' This to the hostess, who was waving Sally Lunn's under my nose. A female, who could not have been less than seven feet high, came on, half speed ahead, through the fog of the tea-steam, and docked herself on the sofa just like an Inman liner.

'Have you ever considered,' said she, 'the enormous moral responsibility that rests in the hands of one who has the gift of literary expression? In my own case—but you surely know my collaborator.'

A much huger woman arrived, cast anchor, and docked herself on the other side of the sofa. She was the collaborator. Together they confided to me that they were desperately in earnest about the amelioration of something or other. Their collective grievance against me was that I was not in earnest.

'We have studied your works—all,' said the five-thousand-ton four-master, 'and we cannot believe that you are in earnest.' 'Oh, no,' I said hastily, 'I never was.' Then I saw that that was the wrong thing to say, for the eight-thousand-ton palace Cunarder

signalled to the sister ship, saying: 'You see, my estimate was correct.'

'Now, my complaint against him is that he is too savagely *farouche*,' said a weedy young gentleman with tow hair who ate Sally Lunn's like a work house orphan. '*Faroucherie* in his age is a fatal mistake.'

I reflected a moment on the possibility of getting that young gentleman out into a large and dusty field and gently exercising him before breakfast. He looked too sleek to me as he then stood. But I said nothing, because a tiny-tiny woman with beady-black eyes shrilled: 'I disagree with you entirely. He is too much bound by the tradition of the commonplace. I have seen in his later works signs that he is afraid of his public. You must *never* be afraid of your public.'

Then they began to discuss me as though I were dead and buried under the hearthrug, and they talked of 'tones' and 'notes' and 'lights' and 'shades' and 'tendencies.'

'And which of us do you think is correct in her estimate of your character?' said the tiny-tiny woman when they had made me out (a) a giddy Lothario; (b) a savage; (c) a Pre-Raphaelite angel; (d) co-equal and co-eternal with half-a-dozen gentlemen whose names I had never heard; (e) flippant; (f) penetrated with pathos; (g) an open atheist; (h) a young man of the Roman Catholic faith with a mission in life.

I smiled idiotically, and said I really didn't know.

Then a man entered whom I knew, and I fled to him for comfort. 'Have I missed the fun?' he asked with a twinkle in his eye.

I explained, snorting, what had befallen.

'Ay,' said he quietly, 'you didn't go the right way to work. You should have stood on the hearthrug and fired off epigrams. That's what I did after I had written *Down in the Doldrums*, and was fed with crumpets in consequence.'

A woman plumped down by my side and twisted her hands into knots, and hung her eyes over her cheek-bones. I thought it was too many muffins, till she said: 'Tell me, oh, tell me, was such-and-such in such a one of your books—was he *real*? Was he *quite* real? Oh, how lovely! How sweet! How precious!' She alluded to that drunken ruffian Mulvaney, who would have driven her into fits had he ever set foot on her doorstep in the flesh. I caught the half of a wink in my friend's eye as he removed himself and left me alone to tell fibs about the evolution of Private Mulvaney. I said anything that came uppermost, and my answers grew so wild that the woman departed.

Then I heard the hostess whispering to a girl, a nice, round, healthy English maiden. 'Go and talk to him,' she said. 'Talk to him about his books.'

I gritted my teeth, and waited till the maiden was close at hand and about to begin. There was a lovely young man at the end of the room sucking a stick, and I felt sure that the maiden would much have preferred talking to him. She smiled prefatorily.

'It's hot here,' I said; 'let's go over to the window'; and I plumped down on a three-seated settee, with my back to the young man, leaving only one place for the maiden. I was right. I signalled up the man who had written *Down in the Doldrums*, and talked to him as fast as I knew how. When he had to go, and the

young man with him, the maiden became enthusiastic, not to say gushing. But I knew that these compliments were for value received. Then she explained that she was going out to India to stay with her married aunt, wherefore she became as a sister unto me on the spot. Her mamma did not seem to know much about Indian outfits, and I waxed eloquent on the subject.

'It's all nonsense,' I said, 'to fill your boxes with things that can be made just as well in the country. What you want are walking-dresses and dinner-dresses as good as ever you can get, and gloves tinned up, and odds and ends of things generally. All the rest, unless you're extravagant, the *dharzee* [tailor] can make in the veranda. Take underclothing, for instance.' I was conscious that my loud and cheerful voice was ploughing through one of those ghostly silences that sometimes fall upon a company. The English only wear their outsides in company. They have nothing to do with underclothing. I could feel that without being told. So the silence cut short the one matter in which I could really have been of use.

On the pavement my friend who wrote *Down in the Doldrums* was waiting to walk home with me. 'What in the world does it all mean?' I said. 'Nothing,' said he. 'You've been asked there as a small deputy lion to roar in place of a much bigger man. You growled, though.'

'I should have done much worse if I'd known,' I grunted. 'Ah,' said he, 'you haven't arrived at the real fun of the show. Wait till they've made you jump

through hoops and your turn's over, and you can sit on a sofa and watch the new men being brought up and put through their paces. You've nothing like that in India. How do you manage your parties?

And I thought of smooth-cut lawns in the gloaming, and tables spread under mighty trees, and men and women, all intimately acquainted with each other, strolling about in the lightest of raiment, and the old dowagers criticising the badminton, and the young men in riding-boots making rude remarks about the claret-cup, and the host circulating through the mob and saying: 'Hah, Piggy,' or Bobby or Flatnose, as the nickname might be, 'have another peg,' and the hostess soothing the bashful youngsters and talking servants with the Judge's wife, and the last new bride hanging on her husband's arm and saying: 'Isn't it almost time to go home, Dicky, dear?' and the little fat owls chuckling in the bougainvilleas, and the horses stamping and squealing in the carriage-drive, and everybody saying the most awful things about everybody else, but prepared to do anything for anybody else just the same; and I gulped a great gulp of sorrow and homesickness.

'You wouldn't understand,' said I to my friend. 'Let's go to a pot-house, where cabbies call, and drink something.'

## THE THREE YOUNG MEN





## THE THREE YOUNG MEN

### LONDON IN THE FOG

‘CURIOUSER AND CURIOUSER,’ as Alice in Wonderland said when she found her neck beginning to grow. Each day under the smoke brings me new and generally unpleasant discoveries. The latest are most on my mind. I hasten to transfer them to yours.

At first, and several times afterwards, I very greatly desired to talk to a thirteen-two subaltern—not because he or I would have anything valuable to say to each other, but just because he was a subaltern. I wanted to know all about that evergreen polo-pony that ‘can turn on a sixpence,’ and the second-hand charger that, by a series of perfectly unprecedented misfortunes, just failed to win the Calcutta Derby. Then, too, I wished to hear of many old friends across the sea, and who had got his company, and why and where the new Generals were going next cold weather, and how the Commander-in-Chief had been enlivening the Simla season. So I looked east and west, and north and south, but never a thirteen-two subaltern broke through the fog; except once—and he had grown a fifteen-one Captain, and wore a tall hat and frock-coat, and was begging for coppers from the Horse Guards. By the way, if you stand long enough between the mounted sentries—the men who look like reflectors stolen from Christmas-trees—you will presently meet every human being you ever knew in

India. When I am not happy—that is to say, once a day—I run off and play on the pavement in front of the Horse Guards, and watch the expressions on the gentlemen's faces as they come out. But this is a digression.

After some days—I grew lonelier and lonelier every hour—I went away to the other end of the town, and catching a friend, said: 'Lend me a man—a young man—to play with. I don't feel happy. I want rousing. I have liver.' And the friend said: 'Ah, yes, of course. What you want is congenial society, something that will stir you up—a fellow-mind. Now let me introduce you to a thoroughly nice young man. He's by way of being an ardent Neo-Alexandrine, and has written some charming papers on the "Ethics of the Wood Pavement." ' Concealing my almost visible rapture, I murmured 'Oh, bliss!' as they used to say at the Gaiety, and extended the hand of friendship to a young gentleman attired after the fashion of the Neo-Alexandrines, who appear to be a sub-caste of social priests. His hand was a limp hand, his face was very smooth because he had not yet had time to grow any hair, and he wore a cloak like a policeman's cloak, but much more so. On his finger was a cameo-ring about three inches wide, and round his neck, the weather being warm, was a fawn, olive and dead-leaf comforter of soft silk—the sort of thing any right-minded man would give to his mother or his sister without being asked.

We looked at each other cautiously for some minutes. Then he said: 'What do you think of the result of the Brighton election?' 'Beautiful, beautiful!' I said, watch-

ing his eye, which saddened. 'One of the worst—that is, entirely the most absurd *reductio ad absurdum* of the principle of the narrow and narrow-minded majority imposing a will which is necessarily incult on a minority animated by . . .' I forget exactly what he said they were animated by, but it was something very fine.

'When I was at Oxford,' he said, 'Haward of Exeter'—he spoke as one speaks of Smith of Asia—'always inculcated at the Union— By the way, you do not know, I suppose, anything of the life at Oxford: 'No,' I said, anxious to propitiate, 'but I remember some boys once who seduced a cart and a pony into a Major's tent at a camp of exercise, laced up the door, and let the Major fight it out with the horse.' I told that little incident in my best style, and was three parts through it before I discovered that he was looking pained and shocked.

'That—ah—was not the side of Oxford that I had in mind when I was saying that Haward of Exeter——' And he explained all about Mr. Haward, who appeared to be a young gentleman, rising twenty-three, of wonderful mental attainments, and as pernicious a prig as I ever dreamed about. Mr. Haward had schemes for the better management of Creation; my friend told me them all—social, political, and economical.

Then, just as I was feeling faint and very much in need of a drink, he launched without warning upon the boundless seas of literature. He wished to know whether I had read the works of Messrs. Guy de Maupassant, Paul Bourget, and Pierre Loti. This in

the tone of a teacher of Euclid. I replied that all my French was confined to the *Vie Parisienne* and translations of Zola's novels with illustrations. Here we parted. London is very large, and I do not think we shall meet any more.

I thanked our Mutual Friend for his kindness, and asked for another young man to play with. This gentleman was even younger than the last, but quite as cocksure. He told me in the course of half a cigar that only men of mediocre calibre went into the Army, which was a brutalising profession; that he suffered from nerves and 'an uncontrollable desire to walk up and down the room and sob' (that was too many cigarettes), and that he had never set foot out of England, but knew all about the world from his own theories. Thought Dickens coarse; Scott jingling and meretricious; and had I by any chance read the novels of Messrs. Guy de Maupassant, Paul Bourget, and Pierre Loti?

Him I left quickly, but sorry that he could not do a six weeks' training with a Middlesex militia regiment, where he would really get something to sob for. The novel business interested me. I perceived that it was a fashion, like his tie and his collars, and I wanted to work it to the fountain-head. To this end I procured the whole Shibboleth from Guy de Maupassant even unto Pierre Loti by way of Bourget. Unwholesome was a mild term for these interesting books, which the young men assured me that they read for style. When a fat Major makes that remark in an Indian Club, everybody hoots and laughs. But you must not laugh overseas, especially at young gentlemen who

have been to Oxford and listened to Mr. Haward of Exeter.

Then I was introduced to another young man who said he belonged to a movement called Toynbee Hall, where, I gathered, young gentlemen took an indecent interest in the affairs of another caste, whom, with rare tact, they called 'the poor,' and told them generally how to order their lives. Such was the manner and general aggressiveness of this third young gentleman, that if he had told me that coats were generally worn, and good for the protection of the body, I should have paraded Bond Street in my shirt. What the poor thought of him I could not tell, but there is no room for it in this letter. He said that there was going to be an upheaval of the classes—the English are very funny about their castes. They don't know how to handle them one little bit, and never allow them to draw water or build huts in peace—and the entire social fabric was about to be remodelled on his recommendations, and the world would be generally altered past recognition. No, he had never seen anything of the world, but close acquaintance with authorities had enabled him to form dispassionate judgments on the subjects, and had I, by any chance, read the novels of Guy de Maupassant, Pierre Loti, and Paul Bourget?

It was a mean thing to do, but I couldn't help it. I had read 'em. I put him on, so to speak, far back in Paul Bourget, who is a genial sort of writer. I pinned him to one book. He could not escape from Paul Bourget. He was fed with it till he confessed—and he had been quite ready to point out its beauties—that he could not take much interest in the theories put

forward in that particular book. Then I said: 'Get a dictionary, and read him,' which severed our budding friendship.

Thereafter I sought our Mutual Friend and walked up and down his room sobbing, or words to that effect. 'Good gracious!' said my friend. 'Is that what's troubling you? Now, I hold the ravaging rights over half-a-dozen fields and a bit of a wood. You can pot rabbits there in the evenings sometimes, and anyway you get exercise. Come along.'

So I went. I have not yet killed anything, but it seems wasteful to drive good powder and shot after poor little bunnies when there are so many other things in the world that would be better for an ounce and a half of Number Five at sixty yards—not enough to disable, but just sufficient to sting, and be pricked out with a penknife.

I should like to wield that penknife.

# MY GREAT AND ONLY





## MY GREAT AND ONLY

WHETHER MACDOUGAL OR MACDOOLE be his name, the principle remains the same, as Mrs. Nickleby said. The gentleman appeared to hold authority in London, and by virtue of his position preached or ordained that music-halls were vulgar, if not improper. Subsequently, I gathered that the gentleman was inciting his associates to shut up certain music-halls on the ground of the vulgarity aforesaid; and I saw with my own eyes that unhappy little managers were putting notices in the corners of their programmes begging the audience to report each and every impropriety. That was pitiful, but it excited my interest.

Now, to the upright and impartial mind—which is mine—, all the diversions of heathendom—which is the English—are of equal ethnological value. And it is true that some human beings can be more vulgar in the act of discussing etchings, editions of luxury, or their own emotions, than other human beings employed in swearing at each other across the street. Therefore, following a chain of thought which does not matter, I visited very many theatres whose licences had never been interfered with. There I discovered men and women who lived and moved and behaved according to rules which in no sort regulate human life; by traditions dead and done with; and after the customs of the more immoral ancients and Mr. Barnum. At one place the lodging-house servant was an angel, and her mother a Madonna: at a second they sounded the loud timbrel

o'er a whirl of bloody axes, mobs, and brown-paper castles, and said it was not a pantomime, but Art: at a third everybody grew fabulously rich and fabulously poor every twenty minutes, which was confusing: at a fourth they discussed the Nudities and the Lewdities in false-palate voices supposed to belong to the aristocracy which tasted copper in the mouth: at a fifth they merely climbed up walls and threw furniture at each other, which is notoriously the custom of spinsters and small parsons. Next morning the papers would write about the progress of the Modern Drama (that was the brown-paper pantomime), and 'graphic presentment of the realities of our highly complex civilisation.' That was the angel housemaid. By the way, when an Englishman has been doing anything more than usually pagan, he generally consoles himself with 'over-civilisation.' It's the 'martyr-to-nerve-dear' note in his equipment.

I went to the Music-halls—the less frequented ones—and they were almost as dull as the plays, but they introduced me to several elementary truths. Ladies and gentlemen in eccentric, but not altogether unsightly, costumes told me—(a) that if I got drunk I should have a head next morning, and perhaps be fined by the magistrate; (b) that if I flirted promiscuously I should probably get into trouble; (c) that I had better tell my wife everything and be good to her, or she would be sure to find out for herself and be very bad to me; (d) that I should never lend money; or (e) fight with a stranger whose form I did not know. My friends (if I may be permitted to call them so) illustrated these facts with personal reminiscences and drove them home

with kicks and prancings. At intervals circular ladies in pale pink and white would low to the audience to the effect that there was nothing half so sweet in life as Love's young dream, and the billycock hats would look at the four-and-elevenpenny bonnets; and they saw that it was good and clasped hands on the strength of it. Then other ladies with shorter skirts would explain that when their husbands:—

Stagger home tight about two,  
An' can't light the candle,  
We taik the broom-'andle,  
An' show 'em what women can do.

Naturally the billycocks, seeing what might befall, thought things over again, and you heard the bonnets murmuring softly under the clink of the lager-glasses: 'Not *me*, Bill. Not *me*!'

Now these things are basic and basaltic truths. Anybody can understand them. They are as old as Time. Perhaps the expression was occasionally what might be called coarse, but beer is beer, and best in a pewter; though you can, if you please, drink it from Venetian glass and call it something else. The Halls give wisdom and not too lively entertainment for sixpence—ticket good for four penn'orth of refreshments, chiefly inky porter—and the people who listen are respectable folk: living under very grey skies who derive all the light side of their life, the food for their imagination, and the crystallised expression of their views on Fate and Nemesis, from the affable ladies and gentlemen singers. They require a few green-and-gold maidens in short skirts to kick before them. Herein they are no better

and no worse than folk who require fifty girls very much underdressed; or a setting of music, or pictures that won't let themselves be seen on account of their age and varnish, or statues and coins. All animals like salt, but some prefer rock-salt; red or black in lumps. But this is a digression.

Out of my many visits to my Hall—I chose one hall, you understand, and frequented it till I could tell the mood it was in before I had passed the box-office—was born the Great Idea. I served it as a slave for seven days. Thought was not sufficient: experience was necessary. I patrolled Westminster, Blackfriars, Lambeth, and the Old Kent Road, and many, many more miles of pitiless pavement to make sure of my subject. At even I drank my lager among the billycocks and lost my heart to a bonnet. Goethe and Shakespeare were my precedents. I sympathised with them acutely: but I got my Message. A chance-caught refrain of a song which, I understand, is “protected”—to its maker I convey my most grateful acknowledgments—gave me what I sought. The rest was made up of four elementary truths, some humour, and, though I say it who should leave it to the Press, Pathos deep and genuine. I spent a penny on a paper which introduced me to a Great and Only who ‘wanted new songs.’ (The People desired them really.) He was their ambassador, and he taught me a great deal about property-right in songs; concluding with a practical illustration, for he said my verses were just the thing and annexed them. It was long before he could hit on the step-dance which exactly elucidated the spirit of my text, and longer before he could jingle a pair of huge brass spurs as a dancing-

girl jingles her anklets. That was *my* notion, and a good one.

My Great and Only had a voice like a bull, and nightly roared to the people at the heels of one who was winning triple encores with a priceless ballad beginning deep down in the bass: 'We was shopmates—boozin' shopmates.' I feared that song as Rachel feared Ristori. A greater than I had written it. It was grim tragedy, lighted with lurid humour, welded to music that maddened. But my Great and Only had faith in me, and I—I clung to the Great Heart of the People—my people—'four hundred when it's full.' I had not studied the People for nothing.

There was no portent in the sky on the night of my triumph. A barrowful of onions indeed upset itself at the door, but that was a coincidence. The Hall was crammed with billycocks waiting for 'We was shopmates.' The Great Heart beat healthily. I went to my beer the equal of Shakespeare and Molière at the wings on a first night. What would my public say? Could anything live after the abandon of 'We was shopmates'? What if the Red-coats did not muster in their usual strength? Oh, my friends, never in your songs and dramas forget the Red-coat. He has sympathy—and enormous boots!

I believed in the Red-coat; in the Great Heart of the People; above all, in myself. The conductor who advertised that he 'doctored bad songs' had devised a pleasant little lilting air for my needs, but it struck me as weak and thin after the thunderous surge of 'Shopmates.' I glanced at the gallery—the Red-coats were

there. The fiddle-bows creaked, and, with a jingle of brazen spurs, a forage-cap over his left eye, my Great and Only began to 'chuck it off his chest.' Thus:—

'At the back of Knightsbridge Barricks,  
When the fog was gatherin' dim,  
The Life Guard talked to the Under-cook,  
An' the girl she talked to 'im.'

'Twiddle-iddle-iddle-lum-tum-tum,' said the violins. 'Ling-aling-aling-a-ling-ting-ling,' said the spurs of the Great and Only, and through the roar in my ears I fancied I could catch a responsive hoof-beat in the gallery. The next four lines held the house to attention. Then came the chorus and the borrowed refrain. It took—it went home with a crisp click. My Great and Only saw his chance. Superbly waving his hand to embrace the entire audience, he invited them to join him in:—

'You may make a mistake when you're mashing a tart,  
But you'll learn to be wise when you're older,  
And don't try for things that are out o' your reach,  
And that's what the Girl told the Soldier,  
Soldier! Soldier!  
An' that's what the Girl told the Soldier.'

I thought the gallery would never let go of the long-drawn howl on 'Soldier.' They clung to it as ringers to the kicking bell-rope. Then I envied no one—not even Shakespeare. I had my house hooked—gaffed under gills, netted, speared, shot behind the shoulder—anything you please! With each verse the chorus grew louder, and when my Great and Only had bellowed

MY GREAT AND ONLY

his way to the fall of the Life Guard and the happy lot of the Under-cook, the gallery rocked again, the reserved stalls shouted, and the pewters twinkled like the legs of demented ballet-girls. The conductor waved the now frenzied orchestra to softer Lydian strains. My Great and Only warbled, *piano*:—

‘At the back o’ the Knightsbridge Barricks,  
When the fog’s a-gatherin’ dim,  
The Life Guard waits for the Under-cook,  
But she don’t wait for ’im.’

‘*Ta-ra-rara-ra-ra-rah*’ rang a horn clear and fresh as a sword-cut. ’Twas the apotheosis of virtue. A2

‘She’s married a man in the poultry line A2  
That lives at ’Ighgate ’Ill.  
An’ the Life Guard walks with the ’ousemaid now,  
An’ (*awful pause*) she can’t foot the bill!’

Who shall tell the springs that move masses? I had builded better than I knew. Followed yells, shrieks, and wildest applause. Then, as a wave gathers to the curl-over, singer and sung-to filled their chests and hove the chorus, through the quivering roof—horns and basses drowned and lost in the flood—to the beach-like boom of beating feet:—

‘Oh, think o’ my song when you’re gowin’ it strong,  
And your boots are too little to ’old yer,  
And don’t try for things that are out of your reach,  
And that’s what the Girl told the Soldier,  
Soldier! Soldier!’



Ow! (Hi! Yi! Wha-hup! Phew! Whit! Pwhit! Bang! Whang Crr-rash! There was ample time for variations as the horns uplifted themselves and ere the voices came down in a foam of sound). *That's what the Girl told the Soldier!*

Providence has sent me many joys, and I have helped myself to others, but that night, as I looked across the sea of tossing billycocks and rocking bonnets—my work—as I heard them give tongue, not once, but four times—their eyes sparkling, their mouths twisted with the taste of pleasure—I felt that I had secured Perfect Felicity. I may become greater than Shakespeare, I may even write plays for the Lyceum, but I never can recapture the first fine careless rapture that followed the Upheaval of the Anglo-Saxon, four hundred of him and her. They do not call for authors on these occasions, but I desired no meed of public recognition. I was utterly happy. The chorus bubbled up again and again throughout the evening, and a Red-coat in the gallery insisted on singing solos about 'a swine in the poultry line' whereas I had written 'man,' and the pewters began to fly, and afterwards the dark street was vocal with various versions of what the girl had really told the soldier, and I went to bed murmuring: 'I have found my Destiny.'

But it needs a more mighty intellect to write the Songs of the People. Some day a man will rise up from Bermondsey, Battersea, or Bow, and he will be coarse, but clear-sighted, hard but infinitely and tenderly humorous, speaking the People's tongue, steeped in their lives, and telling them in swinging, urging, ringing verse what it is that their inarticulate lips would

MY GREAT AND ONLY

express. He will make them songs. Such songs! And all the little poets who pretend to sing to the People will scuttle away like rabbits, for the Girl (who, as you have seen, of course, is Wisdom) will tell that Soldier (who is Hercules bowed under his labours) all that she knows of Life and Death and Love.

And the same, they say, is a Vulgarité!



## **‘THE BETRAYAL OF CONFIDENCES’**



## 'THE BETRAYAL OF CONFIDENCES'

**T**HAT WAS ITS REAL NAME, and its nature was like unto it; but what else could I do? You must judge for me.

They brought a card—the housemaid with the fan-teeth held it gingerly between black finger and blacker thumb—and it carried the name Mr. R. H. Hoffer in old Gothic letters. A hasty rush through the file of bills showed me that I owed nothing to any Mr. Hoffer, and assuming my sweetest smile, I bade Fan of the Teeth show him up. Enter stumblingly an entirely canary-coloured young person about twenty years of age, with a suspicious bulge in the bosom of his coat. He had grown no hair on his face; his eyes were of a delicate water-green, and his hat was a brown billycock, which he fingered nervously. As the room was blue with tobacco-smoke (and Latakia at that) he coughed even more nervously, and began seeking for me. I hid behind the writing-table and took notes. What I most noted was the bulge in his bosom. When a man begins to bulge as to that portion of his anatomy, hit him in the eye, for reasons which will be apparent later on.

He saw me and advanced timidly. I invited him seductively to the only other chair, and 'What's the trouble?' said I.

'I wanted to see you,' said he.

'I am me,' said I.

'I-I-I thought you would be quite otherwise,' said he.

'I am, on the contrary, completely this way,' said I. 'Sit still, take your time, and tell me all about it.'

He wriggled tremulously for three minutes, and coughed again. I surveyed him, and waited developments. The bulge under the bosom crackled. Then I frowned. At the end of three minutes he began.

'I wanted to see what you were like,' said he.

I inclined my head stiffly, as though all London habitually climbed the storeys on the same errand and rather wearied me.

Then he delivered himself of a speech which he had evidently got by heart. He flushed painfully in the delivery.

'I am flattered,' I said at the conclusion. 'It's beastly gratifying. What do you want?'

'Advice, if you will be so good,' said the young man.

'Then you had better go somewhere else,' said I.

The young man turned pink. 'But I thought, after I had read your works—all your works, on my word—I had hoped that you would understand me, and I really have come for advice.' The bulge crackled more ominously than ever.

'I understand perfectly,' said I. 'You are oppressed with vague and nameless longings, are you not?'

'I am, terribly,' said he.

'You do not wish to be as other men are? You desire to emerge from the common herd, to make your mark, and so forth?'

'Yes,' said he in an awe-stricken whisper. 'That is my desire.'

'Also,' said I, 'you love, excessively, in several places

‘THE BETRAYAL OF CONFIDENCES’

at once, cooks, housemaids, governesses, schoolgirls, and the aunts of other people.’

‘But one only,’ said he, and the pink deepened to beetroot.

‘Consequently,’ said I, ‘you have written much—you have written verses.’

‘It was to teach me to write prose, only to teach me to write prose,’ he murmured. ‘You do it yourself, because I have bought your works—all your works.’

He spoke as if he had purchased dunghills *en bloc*.

‘We will waive that question,’ I said loftily. ‘Produce the verses.’

‘They—they aren’t exactly verses,’ said the young man, plunging his hand into his bosom.

‘I beg your pardon, I meant will you be good enough to read your five-act tragedy.’

‘How—how in the world did you know?’ said the young man, more impressed than ever.

He unearthed his tragedy, the title of which I have given, and began to read. I felt as though I were walking in a dream; having been till then ignorant of the fact that earth held young men who held five-act tragedies in their insides. The young man gave me the whole of the performance, from the preliminary scene, where nothing more than an eruption of Vesuvius occurs to mar the serenity of the manager, till the very end, where the Roman sentry of Pompeii is slowly banked up with ashes in the presence of the audience, and dies murmuring through his helmet-vizor: ‘S.P.Q.R.R.I.P.R.S.V.P.,’ or words to that effect.

For three hours and one-half he read to me. And then I made a mistake.



'Sir,' said I, 'who's your Ma and Pa?'

'I haven't got any,' said he, and his lower lip quivered.

'Where do you live?' I said.

'At the back of Tarporley Mews,' said he.

'How?' said I.

'On eleven shillings a week,' said he. 'I was pretty well educated, and if you don't stay too long they will let you read the books in the Holywell Street stalls.'

'And you wasted your money buying my books,' said I, with a lump the size of a bolster in my throat.

'I got them second-hand, four and sixpence,' said he, 'and some I borrowed.'

Then I collapsed. I didn't weep, but I took the tragedy and put it in the fire, and called myself every name that I knew.

This caused the young man to sob audibly, partly from emotion and partly from lack of food.

I took off my hat to him before I showed him out, and we went to a restaurant and I arranged things generally on a financial basis.

Would that I could let the tale stop here. But I cannot.

Three days later a man came to see me on business, an objectionable man of uncompromising truth. Just before he departed he said: 'D'you know anything about the struggling author of a tragedy called "The Betrayal of Confidences"?''

'Yes,' said I. 'One of the few poor souls who in the teeth of grinding poverty keep alight—'

'At the back of Tarporley Mews,' said he. 'On eleven shillings a week.'

‘THE BETRAYAL OF CONFIDENCES’

‘Oh, the mischief!’ said I.

‘He didn’t happen to tell you that he considered you the finest, subtlest, truest, and so forth of all the living so-forths, did he?’

‘He may have said something out of the fullness of an overladen heart. You know how unbridled is the enthusiasm of——’

‘Young gentlemen who buy your books with their last farthing. You didn’t soak it all in by any chance, give him a good meal and half a sovereign as well, did you?’

‘I own up,’ I said. ‘I did all that and more. But how do you know?’

‘Because he victimised me in the same way a fortnight ago.’

‘Thank you for that,’ I said, ‘but I burned his disgusting manuscripts. And he wept.’

‘There, unless he keeps a duplicate, you have scored one.’

But considering the matter impartially, it seems to me that the game is not more than ‘fifteen all’ in any light.

It makes me blush to think about it.



## THE NEW DISPENSATION



## THE NEW DISPENSATION

### I

#### LONDON IN A FOG—NOVEMBER

THINGS HAVE HAPPENED—but that is neither here nor there. What I urgently require is a servant—a nice, fat Mussulman *khitmutgar*, who is not above doing bearer's work on occasion. Such a man I would go down to Southampton or Tilbury to meet, would usher tenderly into a first-class carriage (I always go third myself), and wrap in the warmest of flannel. He should be '*Jenab*' [my lord], and I would be '*O Tum*' [O thou]. When he died, as he assuredly would in this weather, I would bury him in my best back garden and write mortuary verses for publication in the *Koh-i-Nur*, or whatever vernacular paper he might read. I want, in short, a servant; and this is why I am writing to you.

The English, who, by the way, are unmitigated barbarians, maintain cotton-print housemaids to do work which is the manifest portion of a man. Besides which, no properly constructed person cares to see a white woman waiting upon his needs, filling coal-scuttles (these are very mysterious beasts) and tidying rooms. The young homebred Englishman does not object, and one of the most tantalising sights in the world is that of the young man of the house—the son newly introduced to shaving-water and great on the subject of maintaining authority—it is tantalising, I say, to see this young cub hectoring a miserable little

slavey for not having lighted a fire or put his slippers in their proper place. The next time a big, bold man from the Frontier comes Home I shall hire him to kick a few young gentlemen of my acquaintance all round their own drawing-rooms while I lecture on my theory that this sort of thing accounts for the perceptible lack of chivalry in the modern Englishman. Now, if you or I or anybody else raved over and lectured at Kadir Baksh, or Ram Singh, or Jagesa on the necessity of obeying orders and the beauty of reverencing our noble selves, our men would laugh; or if the lecture struck them as too long-winded would ask us if our livers were out of order and recommend medicine. The housemaid must stand with her eyes on the ground while the young whelp sticks his hands under the tail of his dressing-gown and explains her duty to her. This makes me ill and sick—sick for Kadir Baksh, who rose from the earth when I called him, who knew the sequence of my papers and the ordering of my paltry garments, and, I verily believed, loved me not altogether for the sake of lucre. He said he would come with me to Europe because ‘though the Sahib says he will never return to India, yet I know, and all the other servants know, that return is his fate.’

Being a fool, I left Kadir Baksh behind, and now I am alone with housemaids, who will under no circumstances sleep on the mat outside the door. Even as I write, one of these persons is cleaning up my room. Kadir Baksh would have done his work without noise. She tramps and scuffles; and, what is much worse, snuffles horribly. Kadir Baksh would have saluted me

cheerfully and begun some sort of a yarn of the 'It hath reached me, O Auspicious King!' order, and perhaps we should have debated over the worthlessness of Dunni, the groom, or the chances of a little cold-weather expedition, or the wisdom of retaining a fresh orderly—some intimate friend of Kadir Baksh. But now I have no horses and no orderly, and this smutty-faced girl glares at me across the room as though she expected I was going to eat her.

She must have a soul of her own—a life of her own—and perhaps a few amusements. I can't get at these things. She says: 'Ho, yuss,' and 'Ho, no,' and if I hadn't heard her chattering to the lift-boy on the stairs I should think that her education stopped at these two phrases. Now, I knew all about Kadir Baksh, his hopes and his savings—his experiences in the past, and the health of the little ones. He was a man—a human man remarkably like myself, and he knew that as well as I. A housemaid is of course not a man, but she might at least be a woman. My wanderings about this amazing heathen city have brought me into contact with very many English Memsahibs who seem to be eaten up with the fear of letting their servants get 'above their position,' or 'presume,' or do something which would shake the foundations of the four-mile cab radius. They seem to carry on a sort of cat-and-mouse war when the husband is at the office and they have nothing much to do. Later, at places where their friends assemble, they recount the campaign, and the other women purr approvingly and say: 'You did quite right, my dear. It is evident that she forgets her place.'



All this is edifying to the stranger, and gives him a great idea of the dignity that has to be bolstered and buttressed, eight hours of the twenty-four, against the incendiary attacks of an eighteen-pound-including-beer-money sleeps-in-a-garret-at-the-top-of-the-house servant-girl. There is a fine, crusted, slaveholding instinct in the hearts of a good many deep-bosomed matrons—a 'throw-back' to the times when we trafficked in black ivory. At tea-tables and places where they eat muffins it is called dignity. Now, your Kadir Baksh, or my Kadir Baksh, who is a down-trodden and oppressed heathen (the young gentlemen who bullyrag white women assure me that we are in the habit of kicking our dependents and beating them with umbrellas daily), would ask for his notice, and probably say something sarcastic ere he drifted out of the compound gate, if you nagged or worried his noble self. He does not know much about the meaner forms of dignity, but he is entirely sound on the subject of honour, and the fact of his cracking an azure and Oriental jest with you in the privacy of your dressing-room, or seeing you at your incoherent worst when you have an attack of fever, does not in the least affect his general deportment in public, where he knows that the honour of his Sahib is his own honour, and dons a new waistband on the strength of it.

I have tried to deal with those housemaids in every possible way. To sling a blunt 'Annie' or 'Mary' or 'Jane' at a girl whose only fault is that she is a heavy-handed incompetent, strikes me as rather an insult, seeing that the girl may have a brother, and that if you

had a sister who was a servant you would object to her being howled at upstairs and downstairs by her given name. But only ladies' maids are entitled to their surnames. They are not nice people as a caste, and they regard the housemaids as the cobbler regards the sweeper. Consequently, I have to call these girls by their Christian names, and cock my feet up on a chair when they are cleaning the grate, and pass them in the halls in the morning as though they didn't exist. Now, the morning salutation of your Kadir Baksh or my Kadir Baksh is a performance which Turveydrop might envy. These persons don't understand a nod; they think it as bad as a wink, I believe. Respect and courtesy are lost upon them, and I suppose I must gather my dressing-gown into a tail and swear at them in the bloodless voice affected by the British female, who—have I mentioned this?—is a highly composite heathen when she comes in contact with her sister clay downstairs.

The softer methods lay one open to harder suspicions. Not long ago there was trouble among my shirts. I fancied buttons grew on neck-bands. Kadir Baksh and the tailor encouraged me in the belief. When the lead-coloured linen (they cannot wash, by the way, in this stronghold of infidels) shed its buttons I cast about for a means of renewal. There was a housemaid, and she was not very ugly, and I thought she could sew. I knew I could not. Therefore I strove to ingratiate myself with her, believing that a little interest, combined with a little capital, would fix those buttons more firmly than anything else. Subsequently, and after an interval—the buttons were

dropping like autumn leaves—I kissed her. The buttons were attached at once. So, unluckily, was the housemaid, for I gathered that she looked forward to a lifetime of shirt-sewing in an official capacity, and my Revenue Board contemplated no additional establishment. My shirts are buttonsome, but my character is blasted. Oh, I wish I had Kadir Baksh!

This is only the first instalment of my troubles. The heathen in these parts do not understand me; so if you will allow I will come to you for sympathy from time to time. I am a child of calamity.

## THE NEW DISPENSATION

### II

WRITING OF KADIR BAKSH SO wrought up my feelings that I could not rest till I had at least made an attempt to get a substitute of some sort. The black man is essential to my comfort. I fancied I might in this city of barbarism catch a broken-down native strayed from his home and friends, who would be my friend and humble pardner—the sort of man, y'know, who would sleep on a rug somewhere near my chambers (I have forty things to tell you about chambers, but they come later), and generally look after my things. In the intervals of labour I would talk to him in his own tongue, and we would go abroad together and explore London.

Do you know the Albert Docks? The British-India steamers go thence to the sunshine. They sometimes leave a lascar or two on the wharf, and, in fact, the general tone of the population thereabouts is brown and umber. I was in no case to be particular. Anything dusky would do for me, so long as it could talk Hindustani and sew buttons. I went to the Docks and walked about generally among the railway-lines and packing-cases, till I found a man selling tooth-combs, which is not a paying trade. He was ragged even to furriness, and very unwashed. But he came from the East. 'What are you?' I said, and the look of the missionary that steals over me in moments of agitation deluded that tooth-comb man into answering, 'Sar, I

am native Ki-lis-ti-an,' but he put five more syllables into the last word.

There is no Christianity in the Docks worth a tooth-comb. 'I don't want your beliefs. I want your caste,' said I.

'I am Tamil,' said he, 'and my name is Ramasawmy.'

It was an awful thing to lower oneself to the level of a Colonel of the Madras Army, and come down to being tended by a Ramasawmy; but beggars cannot be choosers. I pointed out to him that the tooth-comb trade was a thing lightly to be dropped and taken up. He might injure his health by a washing, but he could not much hurt his prospects by coming along with me and trying his hand at bearer's work. Could he work? Oh, yes, he didn't mind work. He had been a servant in his time. Several servants, in fact.

Could he wash himself?

Ye-es, he might do that if I gave him a coat—a thick coat—afterwards, and especially took care of the tooth-combs, for they were his little all.

Had he any character of any kind?

He thought for a minute and then said cheerfully: 'Not a little dam'. Thereat I loved him, because a man who can speak the truth in minor matters may be trusted with important things, such as shirts.

We went home together till we struck a public bath, mercifully divided into three classes. I got him to go into the third without much difficulty. When he came out he was in the way of cleanliness, and before he had time to expostulate I ran him into the second. Into the first he would not go till I had bought him a cheap ulster. He came out almost clean. That

cost me three shillings altogether. The ulster was half a sovereign, and some other clothes were thirty shillings. Even these things could not hide from me that he looked an unusually villainous creature.

At the chambers the trouble began. The people in charge had race prejudices very strongly, and I had to point out that he was a civilised native Christian anxious to improve his English—it was fluent but unchastened—before they would give him some sort of crib to lie down in. The housemaids called him The Camel. I introduced him as ‘the Tamil,’ but they knew nothing of the ethnological subdivisions of India. They called him ‘that there beastly camel,’ and I saw by the light in his eye he understood only too well.

Coming up the staircase he confided to me his views about the housemaids. He had lived at the Docks too long. I said they weren’t. He said they were.

Then I showed him his duties, and he stood long in thought before the wardrobe. He evidently knew more than a little of the work, but whenever he came to a more than unusually dilapidated garment, he said: ‘No good for you, *I* take’; and he took. Then he put all the buttons on in the smoking of a pipe, and asked if there was anything else. I weakly said: ‘No.’ He said: ‘Good-bye,’ and faded out of the house. The housekeeper of the chambers said he would never return.

But he did. At three in the morning home he came, and, naturally, possessing no latch-key, rang the bell. A policeman interfered, taking him for a burglar, and I was roused by the racket. I explained he was my servant, and the policeman said: ‘He do swear wonderful. ’Tain’t any language I know—most of it, but some

I've heard at Poplar.' Then I dragged The Camel upstairs. He was quite sober, and said he had been waiting at the Docks. He must wait at the Docks every time a British-India steamer came in. A lascar on the *Rewah* had stabbed him in the side three voyages ago, and he was waiting for his man. 'Maybe he have died,' he said; 'but if he have not died I catch him and cut his liver out.' Then he curled himself up on the mat, and slept as noiselessly as a child.

Next morning he inspected the humble breakfast bloater, which did not meet with his approval, for he instantly cut it in two pieces, fried it with butter, dusted it with pepper, and miraculously made of it a dish fit for a king. When the shock-headed boy came to take away the breakfast things, he counted every piece of crockery into his quaking hand and said: 'If you break one dam' thing I cut your dam' liver out and fly *him* with butter.' Consequently, the housemaids said they were not going to clean the rooms as long as The Camel abode within. The Camel put his head out of the door and said they need not. He cleaned the rooms with his own hand and without noise, filled my pipe, made the bed, filled a pipe for himself, and sat down on the hearthrug while I worked. When thought carried him away to the lascar of the *Rewah*, he would brandish the poker or take out his knife and whet it on the brickwork of the grate. It was a soothing sound to work to. At one o'clock he said that the *Chyebassa* would be in, and he must go. He demanded no money, saw that my tiffin was served, and fled. He returned at six o'clock singing a hymn. A lascar on the *Chyebassa* had told him that the *Rewah* was due

in four days, and that his friend was not dead, but ripe for the knife. That night he got very drunk while I was out, and frightened the housemaids. All the chambers were in an uproar, but he crawled out of the skylight on the roof, and sat there till I came home.

In the dawn he was very penitent. He had misarranged his drink; the original intention being to sleep it off on my hearthrug, but a housemaid had invited a friend up to the chambers to look at him, and the whispered comments and giggles made him angry. All next day he was restless but attentive. He urged me to fly to foreign shores, and take him with me. When other inducements failed, he reiterated that he was a 'native Ki-lis-ti-an,' and whetted his knife more furiously than ever. 'You do not like this place. *I* do not like this place. Let us travel *dam*' quick. Let us go on the sea. I cook blotters.' I told him this was impossible, but that if he stayed in my service we might later go abroad and enjoy ourselves.

But he would not rest and sleep on the rug and tend my shirts. On the morning of the *Rewah*'s arrival he went away, and from his absence I fancied he had fallen into the hands of the Law. But at midnight he came back, weak and husky.

'Have got him,' said he simply, and dragged his ulster down from the wall, wrapping it very tightly round him. 'Now I go 'way.'

He went into the bedroom, and began counting over the tale of the week's wash, the boots, and so forth. 'All right,' he called into the other room. Then came in to say good-bye, walking slowly.

'What's your name, marshter?' said he. I told him.



## ABAF THE FUNNEL

He bowed and descended the staircase painfully. I had not paid him a penny, and since he did not ask for it, counted on his returning at least for wages.

It was not till next morning that I found big dark drops on most of my clean shirts, and the housemaid complained of a trail of blood all down the staircase.

‘The Camel’ had received payment in full from other hands than mine.

## THE LAST OF THE STORIES



## THE LAST OF THE STORIES

Wherefore I perceive that there is nothing better, than that a man should rejoice in his own works: for that is his portion.—*Ecclesiastes* iii. 22.

**K**ENCH WITH A LONG HAND, lazy one,' I said to the punkah-coolie 'But I am tired,' said the coolie.

'Then go to Jehannum and get another man to pull,' I replied, which was rude and, when you come to think of it, unnecessary.

'Happy thought—go to Jehannum!' said a voice at my elbow. I turned and saw, seated on the edge of my bed, a large and luminous Devil.

'I'm not afraid,' I said. 'You're an illusion bred by too much tobacco and not enough sleep. If I look at you steadily for a minute you will disappear. You are an *ignis fatuus*.'

'Fatuus yourself!' answered the Devil blandly. 'Do you mean to say you don't know *me*?' He shrivelled up to the size of a blob of sediment on the end of a pen, and I recognised my old friend the Devil of Discontent, who lives in the bottom of the inkpot, but emerges half a day after each story has been printed with a host of useless suggestions for its betterment.

'Oh, it's you, is it?' I said. 'You're not due till next week. Get back to your inkpot.'

'Hush!' said the Devil. 'I have an idea.'

'Too late, as usual. I know your ways.'

'No. It's a perfectly practicable one. Your swearing

at the coolie suggested it. Did you ever hear of a man called Dante?—charmin' fellow, friend o' mine.'

'“Dante once prepared to paint a picture,”' I quoted.

'Yes. I inspired that notion—but never mind. Are you willing to play Dante to my Virgil? I can't guarantee a nine-circle Inferno, any more than *you* can turn out a cantoed epic, but there's absolutely no risk and—it will run to three columns at least.'

'But what sort of Hell do you own?' I said. 'I fancied your operations were mostly above ground. You have no jurisdiction over the dead.'

'Sainted Leopardi!' rapped the Devil, resuming natural size. 'Is *that* all you know? I'm proprietor of one of the largest Hells in existence—the Limbo of Lost Endeavour, where the souls of all the Characters go.'

'Characters? What Characters?'

'All the Characters that are drawn in books, painted in novels, sketched in magazine articles, thumb-nailed in *feuilletons* or in any way created by anybody and everybody who has had the fortune or misfortune to put his or her writings into print.'

'That sounds like a quotation from a prospectus. What do you herd Characters for? Aren't there enough souls in the Universe?'

'Who possess souls and who do not? For aught you can prove, man may be soulless and the creatures he writes about immortal. Anyhow, about a hundred years after printing became an established nuisance, the loose Characters used to blow about Interplanetary Space in legions which interfered with traffic. So they

## THE LAST OF THE STORIES

were collected, and their charge became mine by right. Would you care to see them? *Your own are there.*

'That decides me. But is it hotter than Northern India?'

'On my Devildom, no. Put your arms around my neck and sit tight. I'm going to dive!'

He plunged from the bed head-first into the floor. There was a smell of floor-cloth and damp earth and then fell the black darkness of night.

We stood before a door in a topless wall, from the further side of which came faintly the roar of infernal fires.

'But you said there was no danger!' I cried in an extremity of terror.

'No more there is,' said the Devil. 'That's only the Furnace of First Edition. Will you go on? No other human being has set foot here in the flesh. Let me bring the door to your notice. Pretty design, isn't it? A joke of the Master's.'

I shuddered, for the door was nothing more than a coffin, the backboard knocked out, set on end in the thickness of the wall. As I hesitated, the silence of space was cut by a sharp, shrill whistle, like that of a live shell, which rapidly grew louder and louder. 'Get away from the door,' said the Devil of Discontent quickly. 'Here's a Soul coming to its place.' I took refuge under the broad vans of the Devil's wings. The whistle rose to an ear-splitting shriek and a naked Soul flashed past me.

'Always the same,' said the Devil quietly. 'These

little writers are so anxious to reach their reward. H'm, I don't think he likes *his'n*, though.' A yell of despair reached my ears and I shuddered afresh. 'Who was he?' I asked. 'Hack-writer for a pornographic firm in Belgium, exporting to London—you'll understand presently—and now we'll go in,' said the Devil. 'I must apologise for that creature's rudeness. He should have stopped at the distance-signal for line-clear. You can hear the Souls whistling there now.'

'Are they the souls of men?' I whispered.

'Yes—writer-men. That's why they are so shrill and querulous. Welcome to the Limbo of Lost Endeavour!'

We passed into a domed hall, more vast than visions could embrace, crowded to its limit by men, women, and children. Round the eye of the dome ran, a flickering fire, that terrible quotation from Job: 'Oh, that mine enemy had written a book!'

'Neat, isn't it?' said the Devil, following my glance. 'Another joke of the Master's. Man of *Us*, y'know. In the old days we used to put the Characters into a disused circle of Dante's Inferno, but they grew overcrowded. So Balzac and Théophile Gautier were commissioned to write up this building. It took them three years to complete, and is one of the finest under earth. Don't attempt to describe it unless you are *quite* sure you are equal to Balzac and Gautier in collaboration. Look at the crowds and tell me what you think of them.'

I looked long and earnestly, and saw that many of the multitude were cripples. They walked on their heels or their toes, or with a list to the right or left.

A few of them possessed odd eyes and parti-coloured hair; more threw themselves into absurd and impossible attitudes; and every fourth woman seemed to be weeping.

‘Who are these?’ I said.

‘Mainly the population of three-volume novels that never reach the six-shilling stage. See that beautiful girl with one grey eye and one brown, and the black-and-yellow hair? Let her be an awful warning to you how you correct your proofs. She was created by a careless writer a month ago, and he changed all colours in the second volume. So she came here as you see her. There will be trouble when she meets her author. He can’t alter her now, and she says she’ll accept no apology.’

‘But when will she meet her author?’

‘That’s not in *my* department. Do you notice a general air of expectancy among all the Characters? They are waiting for their authors. Look! That explains the system better than I can.’

A lovely maiden, at whose feet I would willingly have fallen and worshipped, detached herself from the crowd and hastened to the door through which I had just come. There was a prolonged whistle without, a Soul dashed through the coffin and fell upon her neck. The girl with the parti-coloured hair eyed the couple enviously as they departed arm-in-arm to the other side of the hall.

‘That man,’ said the Devil, ‘wrote one magazine story, of twenty-four pages, ten years ago when he was desperately in love with a flesh-and-blood woman. He put all his heart into the work, and created the



girl you have just seen. The flesh-and-blood woman married some one else and died—it's a way they have—but the man has this girl for his very own, and she will everlastingly grow sweeter.'

'Then the Characters are independent?'

'Slightly! Have you never known one of your Characters—even yours—get beyond control as soon as they are made?'

'That's true. Where are those two happy creatures going?'

'To the Levels. You've heard of authors finding their levels? We keep all the Levels here. As each writer enters, he picks up his Characters, or they pick *him* up, as the case may be, and to the Levels he goes.'

'I should like to see——'

'So you shall, when you come through that door a second time—whistling. I can't take you there now.'

'Do you only keep the Characters of living scribblers in this hall?'

'We should be crowded out if we didn't draft them off somehow. Step this way and I'll take you to the Master. One moment, though. There's John Ridd with Lorna Doone, and there are Mr. Maliphant and the Bormalacks—clannish folk, those Besant Characters—don't let The Twins talk to you about Literature and Art. Come along. What's here?'

The white face of Mr. John Oakhurst, gambler, broke through the press. 'I wish to explain,' said he in a level voice, 'that had I been consulted I should never have blown out my brains with the Duchess and all that Poker Flat lot. I wish to add that the only woman

I ever loved was the wife of Brown of Calaveras.' He passed his hand behind him suggestively. 'All right, Mr. Oakhurst,' I said hastily; 'I believe you.' 'Kin you set it right?' he asked, dropping into the Doric of the Gulches. I caught a trigger's cloth-muffled click. 'Just Heavens!' I groaned. 'Must I be shot for the sake of another man's Characters?'

Oakhurst levelled his revolver at my head, but the weapon was struck up by the hand of Yuba Bill. 'You durned fool!' said the stage-driver. 'Hevn't I told you no one but a blamed idiot shoots at sight *now*? Let the galoot go. You kin see by his eyes he's no party to your matrimonial arrangements.' Oakhurst retired with an irreproachable bow, but in my haste to escape I fell over Caliban, his head in a melon and his tame orc under his arm. He spat like a wild-cat.

'Manners none, customs beastly,' said the Devil. 'We'll take the Bishop with us. They all respect the Bishop.' And the great Bishop Blougram joined us, calm and smiling, with the news, for my private ear, that Mr. Gigadibs despised him no longer.

We were arrested by a knot of semi-nude Bacchantes kissing a clergyman. The Bishop's eyes twinkled, and I turned to the Devil for explanation.

'That's Robert Elsmere—what's left of him,' said the Devil. 'Those are French *feuilleton* women and scourings of the Opéra Comique. He has been lecturing 'em, and they don't like it.'

'He lectured *me*!' said the Bishop with a bland smile.

'He has been a nuisance ever since he came here. By the Holy Law of Proportion, he had the audacity to

talk to the Master! Called him a "pot-bellied barbarian"! That is why he is walking so stiffly now,' said the Devil. 'Listen! Marie Pigeonnier is swearing deathless love to him. On my word, we ought to segregate the French Characters entirely. By the way, your regiment came in very handy for Zola's importations.'

'My regiment?' I said. 'How do you mean?'

'You wrote something about the Tyneside Tail-Twisters, just enough to give the outline of the regiment, and of course it came down here—one thousand and eighty strong. I told it off in hollow squares to pen up the Rougon-Macquart series. There they are.' I looked and saw the Tyneside Tail-Twisters ringing an inferno of struggling, shouting, blaspheming men and women in the costumes of the Second Empire. Now and again the shadowy ranks brought down their butts on the toes of the crowd inside the square, and shrieks of pain followed. 'You should have indicated your men more clearly; they are hardly up to their work,' said the Devil. 'If the Zola tribe increase, I'm afraid I shall have to use up your two companies of the Black Tyrone and two of the Old Regiment.'

'I am proud——' I began.

'Go slow,' said the Devil. 'You won't be half so proud in a little while, and I don't think much of your regiments, anyway. But they are good enough to fight the French. Can you hear Coupeau raving in the left angle of the square? He used to run about the hall seeing pink snakes, till the children's story-book Characters protested. Come along!'

Never since Caxton pulled his first proof and made

for the world a new and most terrible God of Labour had mortal man such an experience as mine when I followed the Devil of Discontent through the shifting crowds below the motto of the Dome. A few—a very few—of the faces were old friends, but there were thousands whom I did not recognise. Men in every conceivable attire and of every possible nationality, deformed by intention, or the impotence of creation that could not create—blind, unclean, heroic, mad, sinking under the weight of remorse or with eyes made splendid by the light of love and fixed endeavour; women fashioned in ignorance and musing the errors of their creator, life and thought at variance with body and soul; perfect women such as walk rarely upon this earth, and horrors that were women only because they had not sufficient self-control to be fiends; little children, fair as the morning, who put their hands into mine and made most innocent confidences; loathsome, lank-haired infant-saints, curious as to the welfare of my soul, and delightfully mischievous boys, generalised by the irrepressible Tom Sawyer, who played among murderers, harlots, professional beauties, nuns, Italian bandits, and politicians of state.

The ordered peace of Arthur's Court was broken up by the incursions of Mr. John Wellington Wells, and Dagonet, the jester, found that his antics drew no attention so long as the 'dealer in magic and spells,' taking Tristram's harp, sang patter-songs to the Round Table; while a Zulu *impi*, headed by Allan Quatermain, wheeled and shouted in sham fight for the pleasure of Little Lord Fauntleroy. Every century and

every type was jumbled in the confusion of one colossal fancy-ball where all the Characters were living their parts.

'Aye, look long,' said the Devil. 'You will never be able to describe it, and the next time you come you won't have the chance. Look long, and look at'—Good's passing with a maiden of the Zu-Vendi must have suggested the idea—'look at their legs.' I looked, and for the second time noticed the lameness that seemed to be almost universal in the Limbo of Lost Endeavour. Brave men and stalwart to all appearance had one leg shorter than the other; some paced a few inches above the floor, never touching it, and others found the greatest difficulty in preserving their feet at all. The stiffness and laboured gait of these thousands was pitiful to witness. I was sorry for them. I told the Devil as much.

'H'm,' said he reflectively, 'that's the world's work. Rather cockeye, ain't it? They do everything but stand on their feet. *You* could improve them, I suppose?' There was an unpleasant sneer in his tone, and I hastened to change the subject.

'I'm tired of walking,' I said. 'I want to see some of my own Characters, and go on to the Master, whoever he may be, afterwards.'

'Reflect,' said the Devil. 'Are you certain—do you know how many they be?'

'No—but I want to see them. That's what I came for.'

'Very well. Don't abuse me if you don't like the view. There are one-and-fifty of your make up to date, and—it's rather an appalling thing to be confronted with fifty-one children. However, here's a

special favourite of yours. Go and shake hands with her!’

A limp-jointed, staring-eyed doll was hirpling towards me with a strained smile of recognition. I felt that I knew her only too well—if indeed she were he.

‘Keep her off, Devil!’ I cried, stepping back. ‘I never made *that*!’

“‘She began to weep and she began to cry, I ord ha’ mercy on me, this is none of I!’ You’re very rude to—Mrs. Hauksbee, and she wants to speak to you,’ said the Devil. My face must have betrayed my dismay, for the Devil went on soothingly: ‘That’s as she is, remember. I *knew* you wouldn’t like it. Now what will you give if I make her as she ought to be? No, I don’t want your soul, thanks. I have it already, and many others of better quality. Will you, when you write your story, own that I am the best and greatest of all the Devils?’ The doll was creeping nearer. ‘Yes,’ I said hurriedly. ‘Anything you like. Only I can’t stand her in that state.’

‘You’ll *have* to when you come next again. Look! No connection with Jekyll and Hyde!’ The Devil pointed a lean and inky finger towards the doll, and lo! radiant, bewitching, with a smile of dainty malice, her high heels clicking on the floor like castanets, advanced Mrs. Hauksbee as I had imagined her in the beginning.

‘Ah!’ she said. ‘You are here so soon? Not dead yet? That will come. Meantime, a thousand congratulations. And now, what do you think of me?’ She put her hands on her hips, revealed a glimpse of the smallest foot in Simla, and hummed: “‘Just look at

that . . . just look at this ! And then you'll see I'm not amiss."

'She'll use exactly the same words when you meet her next time,' said the Devil warningly. 'You dowered her with any amount of vanity, if you left out—Excuse me a minute! I'll fetch up the rest of your menagerie.' But I was looking at Mrs. Hauksbee.

'Well?' she said. '*Am* I what you expected?'

I forgot the Devil and all his works, forgot that this was not the woman I had made, and could only murmur rapturously: 'By Jove! You *are* a beauty.' Then, incautiously: 'And you stand on your feet!'

'Good Heavens!' said Mrs. Hauksbee. 'Would you, at my time of life, have me stand on my head?' She folded her arms and looked me up and down.

I was grinning imbecilely—the woman was so alive. 'Talk,' I said absently; 'I want to hear you talk.'

'I am not used to being spoken to like a coolie,' she replied.

'Never mind,' I said. 'That may be for outsiders, but I made you and I've a right—'

'You have a right? You made me? My dear sir, if I didn't know that we should bore each other so inextinguishably hereafter I should read you an hour's lecture this instant. You made me! I suppose you will have the audacity to pretend that you understand me—that you *ever* understood me. Oh, man, man—foolish man! If you only knew!'

'Is that the person who thinks he understands us, Loo?' drawled a voice at her elbow. The Devil had returned with a cloud of witnesses, and it was Mrs. Mallowe who was speaking.

'I've touched 'em all up,' said the Devil in an aside. 'You couldn't stand 'em raw. But don't run away with the notion that they are your work. I show you what they ought to be. You must find out for yourself how to make 'em so.'

'Am I allowed to remodel the batch—up above?' I asked anxiously.

'*Litera scripta manet*. That's in the Delectus and Eternity.' He turned round to the semicircle of Characters: 'Ladies and gentlemen, who are all a great deal better than you should be by virtue of *my* power, let me introduce you to your maker. If you have anything to say to him, you can say it.'

'What insolence!' said Mrs. Hauksbee between her teeth. 'This isn't a Peterhof drawing-room. I haven't the slightest intention of being leaved by this person. Polly, come here and we'll watch the animals go by.' She and Mrs. Mallowe stood at my side. I turned crimson with shame, for it is an awful thing to see one's Characters in the solid.

'Wal,' said Gilead P. Beck as he passed, 'I would not be you at this *pre-cise* moment of time, not for all the ile in the univarsal airth. No, sirr! I thought my dinner-party was soul-shatterin', but it's mush—mush and milk—to your circus. Let the good work go on!'

I turned to the company and saw that they were men and women, standing upon their feet as folks should stand. Again I forgot the Devil, who stood apart and sneered. From the distant door of entry I could hear the whistle of arriving Souls, from the semi-darkness at the end of the hall came the thun-



derous roar of the Furnace of First Edition, and everywhere the restless crowds of Characters muttered and rustled like wind-blown autumn leaves. But I looked upon my own people and was perfectly content as man could be.

'I have seen you study a new dress with just such an expression of idiotic beatitude,' whispered Mrs. Mallowe to Mrs. Hauksbee. 'Hush!' said the latter. 'He thinks he understands.' Then to me: 'Please trot them out. Eternity is long enough in all conscience, but that is no reason for wasting it. *Pro*-ceed, or shall I call them up? Mrs. Vansuythen, Mr. Boulte, Mrs. Boulte, Captain Kurrell, and the Major!'

The European population in Kashima in the Dosehri hills, the actors in the Wayside Comedy, moved towards me; and I saw with delight that they were human. 'So you wrote about us?' said Mrs. Boulte. 'About my confession to my husband and my hatred of that Vansuythen woman? Did you think that you understood? Are *all* men such fools?'

'That woman is bad form,' said Mrs. Hauksbee, 'but she speaks the truth. I wonder what these soldiers have to say.' Gunner Barnabas and Private Shacklock stopped, saluted, and hoped I would take no offence if they gave it as their opinion that I had not 'got them down quite right.' I gasped.

A spurred Hussar succeeded, his wife on his arm. It was Captain Gadsby and Minnie, and close behind them swaggered Jack Mafflin, the Brigadier-General in his arms. 'Had the cheek to try to describe our life, had you?' said Gadsby carelessly. 'Ha-hmm! S'pose he understood, Minnie?' Mrs. Gadsby raised her face

to her husband and murmured: 'I'm *sure* he didn't, Pip,' while Poor Dear Mamma, still in her riding-habit, hissed: 'I'm sure he didn't understand *me*.' And these also went their way.

One after another they filed by—Trewinnard, the pet of his Department; Otis Yeere, lean and lan'-horn-jawed; Crook O'Neil and Bobby Wick arm in arm; Janki Meah, the blind miner in the Jimahari coal-fields; Afzul Khan, the policeman; the murderous Nathan horse-dealer, Durga Dass; the *bunnia*; Boh Da Thone, the dacoit; Dana Da, weaver of false magic; the Leander of the Barwhi ford; Peg Barney, drunk as a coot; Mrs. Delville, the dowd; Dinah Shadd, large, red-cheeked and resolute; Simmons, Slane and Løsson; Georgie Porgie and his Burmese helpmate; a shadow in a high collar, who was all that I had ever indicated of the Hawley Boy—the nameless men and women who had trod the Hill of Illusion and lived in the Tents of Kedar, and last, His Majesty the King.

Each one in passing told me the same tale, and the burden thereof was: 'You did not understand.' My heart turned sick within me. 'Where's Wee Willie Winkie?' I shouted. 'Little children don't lie.'

A clatter of pony's feet followed, and the child appeared, habited as on the day he rode into Afghan territory to warn Coppy's love against the 'bad men.' 'I've been playing,' he sobbed, 'playing on ve Levels wiv Jackanapes and Lollo, an' *he* says I'm only just borrowed. I *isn't* borrowed. I'm Willie Wi-inkie! Vere's Coppy?'

'“Out of the mouths of babes and sucklings,”'

whispered the Devil, who had drawn nearer. 'You know the rest of the proverb. Don't look as if you were going to be shot in the morning! Here are the last of your gang.'

I turned despairingly to the Three Musketeers, dearest of all my children to me—to Privates Mulvaney, Ortheris, and Learoyd. Surely the Three would not turn against me as the others had done! I shook hands with Mulvaney. 'Terence, how goes? Are *you* going to make fun of me, too?'

'Tis not for me to make fun av you, sorr,' said the Irishman, 'knowin' as I *du* know fwhat good frinds we've been for the matther av three years.'

'Fower,' said Ortheris. 'Twas in the Helanthami barricks, H block, we was become acquaint, an' 'ere's thankin' you kindly for all the beer we've drunk twix' that and now.'

'Four ut is, then,' said Mulvaney. 'He an' Dinah Shadd are your frinds, but——' He stood uneasily.

'But what?' I said.

'Savin' your presince, sorr, an' it's more than on-willin' I am to be hurtin' you; you did not ondhersthand. On my sowl an' honour, sorr, you did not ondhersthand. Come along, you two.'

But Ortheris stayed for a moment to whisper: 'It's Gawd's own trewth, but there's this 'ere to think. 'Tain't the bloomin' belt that's wrong, as Peg Barney sez, when he's up for bein' dirty on p'rade. 'Tain't the bloomin' belt, sir; it's the bloomin' pipeclay.' Ere I could seek an explanation he had joined his companions.

'For a private soldier, a singularly shrewd man,' said

Mrs. Hauksbee, and she repeated Ortheris's words. The last drop filled my cup, and I am ashamed to say that I bade her be quiet in a wholly unjustifiable tone. I was rewarded by what would have been a notable lecture on propriety, had I not said to the Devil: 'Change that woman to a d——d doll again! Change 'em all back as they were—as they are. I'm sick of them.'

'Poor wretch!' said the Devil of Discontent very quietly. 'They are changed.'

The reproof died on Mrs. Hauksbee's lips, and she moved away marionette-fashion, Mrs. Mallow trailing after her. I hastened after the remainder of the Characters, and they were changed indeed—even as the Devil had said, who kept at my side.

They limped and stuttered and staggered and mouthed and staggered round me, till I could endure no more.

'So I am the master of this idiotic puppet-show, am I?' I said bitterly, watching Mulvaney trying to come to attention by spasms.

'*In saecula saeculorum,*' said the Devil, bowing his head; 'and you needn't kick, my dear fellow, because they will concern no one but yourself by the time you whistle up to the door. Stop reviling me and uncover. Here's the Master.'

Uncover! I would have dropped on my knees, had not the Devil prevented me, at sight of the portly form of Maître François Rabelais, sometime Curé of Meudon. He wore a smoke-stained apron of the colours of Gargantua. I made a sign which was duly returned. 'An Entered Apprentice in difficulties with

his rough ashlar, Worshipful Sir,' explained the Devil. I was too angry to speak.

Said the Master, rubbing his chin: 'Are those things yours?'

'Even so, Worshipful Sir,' I muttered, praying inwardly that the Characters would at least keep quiet while the Master was near.

He touched one or two thoughtfully, put his hand upon my shoulder and started. 'By the Great Bells of Notre Dame, you are in the flesh—the warm flesh!—the flesh I quitted so long—ah, so long! And you fret and behave unseemly because of these shadows! Listen now! I, even I, would give my Three, Panurge, Gargantua, and Pantagruel, for one little hour of the life that is in you. And *I* am the Master!'

But the words gave me no comfort. I could hear Mrs. Mallowe's joints cracking—or it might have been merely her stays.

'Worshipful Sir, he will not believe that,' said the Devil. 'Who live by shadows lust for shadows. Tell him something more to his need.'

The Master grunted contemptuously: 'And he is flesh and blood! Know this, then. The First Law is to make them stand upon their feet, and the Second is to make them stand upon their feet, and the Third is to make them stand upon their feet. But, for all that, Trajan is a fisher of frogs.' He passed on, and I could hear him say to himself: 'One hour—one minute—of life in the flesh, and I would sell the Great Perhaps thrice over!'

'Well,' said the Devil, 'you've made the Master angry, seen about all there is to be seen, except the

Furnace of First Edition, and, as the Master is in charge of that, I should avoid it. Now you'd better go. You know what you ought to do?'

'I don't need all Hell——'

'Pardon me. Better men than you have cal'ed this Paradise.'

'All *Hell*,' I said, 'and the Master to tell me what I knew before. What I want to know is *how*?'

'Go and find out,' said the Devil.

We turned to the door, and I was aware that my Characters had grouped themselves at the exit 'They are going to give you an ovation. Think of that, now!' said the Devil. I shuddered and dropped my eyes, while one-and-fifty voices broke into a wailing song, whereof the words, so far as I recollect, ran:—

But we, brought forth and reared in hours  
Of change, alarm, surprise,  
What shelter to grow ripe is ours—  
What leisure to grow wise?

I ran the gauntlet, narrowly missed collision with an impetuous Soul (I hoped he liked his Characters when he met them), and flung free into the night, where I should have knocked my head against the stars. But the Devil caught me.

The brain-fever bird was fluting across the grey, dewy lawn, and the punkah had stopped again. 'Go to Jehannum and get another man to pull,' I said drowsily.

'Exactly,' said a voice from the inkpot.

Now the proof that this story is absolutely true lies in the fact that there will be no other to follow it.



## OTHER STORIES





# THE BATTLE OF RUPERT SQUARE

1889



## THE BATTLE OF RUPERT SQUARE

**N**OW I CAN DIE with a clear mind, facing the other world unflinching. Earth has no more to offer me.

And yet it came suddenly, by accident, in the meanest of streets and the most ordinary of squares. In the dead south-eastern ventricle of the heart of London it arrived at noon: in the sight of none more worthy than a servant who was cleaning doorsteps, a man in control of a furniture-van, and myself.

One hansom—Number 97,463—entered Rupert Square, which is not yet paved with wood pavement. The horse was a mealy bay, and in the splashboard of the conveyance a clock was fixed in order that the fare might watch the errors of the cabman. From the opposite end of the square appeared a man, long-bearded, cloth-capped, Inverness-cape-robed, thick-booted, and evidently a mariner but newly come from the seas. He hailed the hansom loudly with large shouts. The hansom answered the hail. The cloth-capped man spoke long and earnestly to the driver, interlarding his directions with the technicalities of the sea. What bond of sympathy was between driver and driven I dare not say. It is enough for those less fortunate than I to know that the driver answered after the use of infuriated cabmen. The fare stood with his foot on the step and responded to the toast of his eternal perdition in a short but elegant speech. He then dived into the cab.

‘I won’t take you,’ said the cabby, ‘not for any

price. No, not though you bought the 'ole bloomin' turn-out. You ain't fit not to be druv in a dust-cart with a glandered 'orse in front an' the knacker's depety be'ind, you ain't. You call yourself a man. I've seen a better man than you made outer chewed paper with no gum! You get outer my keb, you rusty-'aired, slink-jawed, pick-nosed, gin-faced son of a broken-down four-wheeler. G'out!

He delivered his oration through the trap-door, and a big brown fist came up and stung him on the nose. The horse stayed where he had drawn up, close to the kerb. The cabby, shortening his whip, drove the butt through the trap-door and generally stirred up the contents. Then, for reasons best known to himself, he painfully hauled out his weapon and commenced lashing into the front most scientifically. A stray cut caught the horse on the quarters, and he began to trot. The cabby shortened his whip and flicked deftly over the brow of the hansom. A hand detained the whip-lash and a knobby stick plunged through the trap, as a shark rears himself on end in the summer seas of the Equator, and caught the cabby obliquely on the chin, the upper lip, and a portion of the nose, causing him to use language which was historical.

But the servant-girl and the man with the furniture-van were the only spectators. The railed fronts of Rupert Square, S.E., gave no sign of life. The cabby drew the horse-blanket swiftly over the trap-door and leaned upon it with both elbows, sending the lash into the front as occasion offered. A jingle of glass and woodwork attested that the fare had pulled down the glass. The horse trotted stolidly round Rupert Square.

## THE BATTLE OF RUPERT SQUARE

'Get outer that,' shouted the cabby. The fare might have been a mummy, for any response that he gave. 'You ain't fit to be druv not in the paupers' hearse, you ain't, not though the corpse was your father.' He addressed these remarks at first to Rupert Square, and added a second edition when he cautiously raised the trap-door. Again the knobby stick stabbed aloft and got home on the cabby's right cheek-bone, while a hairy hand grasped at the horse-blanket and dragged it into the depths of the hansom before the cabby could arrest its departure. The horse continued to trot at not more than six or less than four miles round and round the square.

'I'll have you outer that if I 'ave to set fire to the 'ole bloomin' cab,' said the proprietor; and upon the word the trap opened and a red-hot fusee hit him in the eye. Much as I disapproved of his conduct, I respected the fare. He was fighting an uphill battle at fearful odds. A second fusee followed; but there was neither exclamation nor oath to accompany the flight. Time on a tour, Death abroad for a jaunt, could not have been more methodical or more silent in their proceedings. And the horse trotted round and round Rupert Square as the cabman sat back and tried to dodge the flaming 'braided fixed stars.' Not for anything on earth would I have interfered. The one desire of my delighted soul was that all the policemen in London might die on the spot to allow a fair field for the combatants; and in that regard the man with the furniture-van was with me. The servant-girl opened her mouth and said, 'Lor!'

To the fusee succeeded the sudden savage spurts of

## THE BATTLE OF RUPERT SQUARE

the stick, all delivered in absolute silence. Then the horse-blanket was flung out into the road through the lower section of the window hastily raised for that end. Followed the nickel-plated cigar-holder, a box of matches, the reading-lamp at the back, and fragments of the mirrors at the sides. The horse continued to trot, while at each output the cabby lashed blindly over the front of the cab. 'Why in the world,' said I to the man with the furniture-van, 'doesn't he take that lunatic to the nearest police-station?' 'He knows something worth two of that,' said the furniture man. 'See!'

At the head of Rupert Square stands a hydrant for the water-carts. The cabman checked his horse here just as a swift sharp jab of the stick through the half-raised window dissolved the splashboard clock into white enamel and yellow cog-wheels, and a flight of pieces bestrewed the cabman's cape. Out of his own slender purse the cabman proffered three pence to a water-cart that stood by for the right of way. The water-cart moved on as stolidly as its driver flung back the hose.

'*Will you get out o' that?*' said the cabman through the trap-door for the last time. There was no answer save a sound of ripping cloth. The hose was swung over and adjusted to the trap-door of the hansom. Have you ever seen a hansom filled with water? Have you ever heard the furious sizzle of the current as it hisses through the trap? If you have not, you are ignorant of the depth and significance of life.

I heard the cataract and a crash of broken glass. The fare had smashed the window and was, through the

shower-bath, pelting the horse with the fragments of sash and crystal. They hurt the feelings of the animal, who plunged forward. In vain the driver strove to hold his foe by lashing in at the now freed avenue of access. The knobby stick appeared over the doors, furiously prodding the maddened horse, or anon striking wildly at the reins right and left.

At the only exit from Rupert Square it delivered one terrific blow on the near rein, driving the beast full into the shoulder of a respectable residence, and all things were dissolved into their elements—dropping cab, kicking horse, and dispersed driver. The fare, still preserving his unbroken silence, jammed his cape over his brows and ran. The cabman breathed heavily as he lay on the pavement. The horse dealt apart with the splashboard.

‘Well I never!’ said the furniture man, and a gleam in his eyes showed me that he was a soul akin to mine.

The cabman picked himself up grunting. He surveyed the wreck calmly, and then as one who felt that an explanation was due to the world, said, ‘It’s mee brother.’

But what it all meant—whether the brother was a maniac, or one merely working out a family feud—whether he invariably treated all his hansoms thus curiously or only at intervals when his madness was on him—I cannot tell.

This I know. I have seen a fight such as never was seen before since London hansoms were first made: and the furniture-van man alone of 4,900,000 saw it with me.

The servant-girl didn’t understand.





FOR ONE NIGHT ONLY

1890



## FOR ONE NIGHT ONLY

AND MRS. SKITTLEWORTH TOLD THE TALE at a place called the Arts and Crafts, which, when you think of it, was unnecessary; Mrs. Skittleworth herself being all the arts and most of the crafts known to civilisation.

She was then practising a few of them on the centre divan opposite the entrance, where the fountain plays and the unhappy little pot-palms live. In the first place it was her sworn duty to keep an evasive eye upon a Miss Dormil, who was to be most strictly deprived of the comfort and society of a gentleman called Evans—Richard Evans—who had specially come to the Arts and Crafts to meet the young lady, who was under the chaperonage of Mrs. Skittleworth, according to the manners and customs of the British: who are barbarians. Now since Mrs. Skittleworth had convoyed Miss Dormil wholly and solely to meet Mr. Evans, and since she had to pretend that she saw neither him nor the girl, nor both together, or something equally logical; and since she uneasily suspected that Mrs. Dormil might at any minute arrive and drive the daughter home, and particularly since neither man nor maid seemed to have any idea of the lapse of time, you will understand that Mrs. Skittleworth's attention was distracted from the door whereat she expected Skittleworth every minute to appear in the company of a man whom she most urgently desired to avoid.

I believe that I had the honour to supply the Missing Link, for on my wandering appearance her face

brightened as a general's when reinforcements pour past to battle.

'There is a man,' she said, 'an Unutterable Man. He will arrive with Tom in ten minutes. I shall immediately introduce you to him with smirks and grins. You will more immediately talk. Talk about anything you understand least, but overwhelm him with your conversation as you value my friendship. Then I shall escape with Tom, catch Miss Dormil, drive the Evans boy into the stained-glass alcove—Good gracious! I hope he hasn't taken the girl there already!—and return to meet, under Providence, the very respectable Mrs. Dormil, who will ask the Unutterable Man to dinner. He is always hungry and . . . he has dined there before. Then you must transfer yourself to the Evans boy, and while we are all at tea in the lunch-place you must escape with him secretly. There ought always to be two ways out of every place of appointment.' And she paused for breath.

She was used to delivering orders with much clearness, and I gathered from the pucker between her eyebrows that she was in anxiety. Her theory that men do not marry their mothers-in-law, though many mothers-in-law think otherwise, was perpetually leading her into second-hand Comédie-Française embarrassments. All earth and Skittleworth—who at heart is just as bad—could not restrain her from helping forward the most undesirable match ever lighted among her circles of acquaintance. On the Other Side of the World, where I first had the honour of meeting her, this weakness did not alarm. In England—which, it must always be remembered, is the habitation of heathen the worse

for being imperfectly converted—she was misunderstood. But the young maidens loved her.

And I said: 'I hear and obey—on one condition.'

'On no conditions. You want me to tell you something. I refuse beforehand.'

'Very well. I shall begin to walk. I shall walk down Regent Street for hours and hours, and into the Mile End Road, and when Mrs. Dormil comes to thank you for giving her dear Clara, who is so artistic, such a delightful afternoon, the Evans boy will hang in the background pulling pieces out of his gloves, and Mrs. Dormil will not love you any more. Seriously, you went to the Theatre of the Patent Deviltries—'

'No! Inner Sepulchre! Inner Sepulchre!' said Mrs. Skittleworth, with a shudder. 'So glad we didn't invite you.'

'So am I,' I said icily. 'You made a box party, and by all accounts you all behaved abominably. You dropped opera-glasses on the heads of the bald, you conducted yourselves in such a manner that the entire house stopped to look at you, and you, overcome by shame, left at the end of the first act—weeping.'

'This,' said Mrs. Skittleworth pensively, 'is the hand of Mrs. Bletchley. She told you that at tea. What else did you learn?'

'The trouble is that I could learn no more. Not one of your guests would speak. Geissler, who can talk about founders' shares by the hour, was dumb. Skittleworth told me that I had better refer to you. I haven't seen Miss Dormil to speak to, and the Evans boy declared that it was a most enjoyable evening, but that you all left because the play was dull. *The Professor's*

*Zoetrope* is not dull. It's the best play in London. What was the catastrophe? Everybody is wanting to talk about it, and no one knows anything. Six people have kept a secret for ten days—surely that's long enough. Tell, and I'll carry the Evans boy off through the roof, if I can't smuggle him out any other way.'

'Did anyone tell you it was Tom's fault?' began Mrs. Skittleworth cautiously, one eye on the door and the other on the artistic ironwork exhibits.

'They said Singleton gave the party—and so . . .'

'He did *not*. It was that man Geissler—the Chicago Jew. Ugh! Tom and he cluck like new-laid hens over their founders' shares, whatever those may be. Things that grow up in a night out of nothing and are sold by telegraph. I hate Geissler. He took a box in the Inner Sepulchre. I know the shameful story now, but it almost reconciled me to the man for the moment. The very best box in the Inner Sepulchre—a box that could have seated hordes—positive hordes. Do you know that he got it for twenty-five shillings? That was his ineffable meanness.'

'But a Chicago Jew is not always mean,' I ventured.

'Then he was a Levantine dragoman. I thank you for that. His father hauled Cook's tourists up and down the Pyramids. And the worst of it is that he doesn't look like a Jew, and he ought to. We provided the dinner—he the box.'

'Who came?'

'Mrs. Eva van Agnew, the younger sister, and Geissler, both in one cab—two; Tom and I—four; and Miss Dormil and the Evans boy—six. That was all. I

never allow fortuitous concourses of atoms at my table; and, besides, we have no extra leaf in it. I had immense trouble in cajoling Mrs. Dormil to let her daughter go alone. She wished to assist. Heaven knows I despise her as honourably as I despise most women; but when she strips for festivities, I always think she should be "hidden from the wise and prudent and"—how does it go? And, you know, you can't say: "Won't you put a counterpane over your shoulders, you dear fat thing?" So they dined, and I was glad, because I knew neither of the young people would remember what they ate—they were in *that* stage; and Geissler was talking founders' shares to Tom, and Eva van Agnew was trying to talk to me and watch Geissler at the same time. Geissler wouldn't throw a word to her. There must have been a quarrel in the cab.'

'But why were you so concerned about Miss Dormil and the Evans boy?'

'Because he had inflicted himself upon me four twilights out of seven. He would arrive at half-past four, and stay till half-past six, telling me that Miss Dormil was an angel and he was a ruffian, and did I think Mrs. Dormil could be brought to overlook his unworthiness? I liked it—I own I liked it immensely, even when he used to smash my drawing-room ornaments trying to make clear the intensity of his feelings. Oh, it's a relief to catch a young man devoid of nerves, and the less honourable emotions, who does not talk cheap French novels, and knows exactly what he wants, and is humble about it. He confessed all his little sins in the past to me, and I know exactly how his future is going



to be arranged, and therefore I assist him in the present. And so we dined, and then we bundled off—Tom and I and those two children in the brougham, and Eva and the Israelite, whom I will *never* forgive, in a hansom; and we saw the play and came away early. Isn't that enough for you?

'You went in the brougham and the hansom—yes. And what happened after that?' I insisted.

'You won't believe what I tell you.'

'*You* are speaking.'

'But even I—remember mother Dormil, and *do* watch the entrance, please—may tell a fib.'

'Never without a motive.'

'Yes—that was the horror of it. It was so—without motive. So purposeless—so cruel; and yet there was a brassy vulgarity about it all that I can't explain. Try to understand that I am telling you what happened as accurately as I can. We were late for the farce, of course, and the overture was beginning. Of all horrors, it was the *Bronze Horse* overture.'

'That's only tinny—not terrifying.'

'Wait! I had arranged things beautifully. Tom and I and Eva and Geissler were to sit in front, and the children at the back, because they were tall and wanted to talk. You know, when you are absolutely certain of seeing a thing, you carry the outline of it in your mind's eye so that it looks real, don't you? When we trooped in, I was quite certain that I saw the stage, and so on, because a stage is naturally what you expect to see from the best box in the theatre. We banged the chairs about—they were horribly dusty—and then I heard the Evans boy saying, "Good God!" under his

breath. Tom put his hand on my wrist, and drove my pet bracelet into the bone. "Don't jump or scream," he said. "Look!" . . . .'

We looked out of the box at the stage, and at the house, and there was nothing whatever to be seen! Do you understand that?—Nothing whatever to be seen.'

'And what was it like?' I said.

'It was awful. It was unspeakable. It was Chaos—raving, mad, howling Chaos! Have you ever been under chloroform, and do you know that die-away-and-away darkness when a train goes into a tunnel, through your head, and all the doors are being slammed, just before you lose consciousness? It was most like that feeling. But it *wasn't*. The darkness—the absolute blankness was in your head and your eyes, and yet you were staring into it—staring with your soul as well as your eyes. And then, through it all, we heard the rustle of the house, and the music of *The Bronze Horse*. That tune is the most diabolical in the world.'

'Then you could hear?'

'We could hear everything. That was a further horror. We could hear the people getting into their places below, and the crinkle of the fans. You know what a hothouse the Inner Sepulchre is. We could hear the rumble of traffic outside sometimes, but we could not see any single thing except ourselves in heaven above, or the earth beneath, or the waters under the earth.'

'And what happened?'

'I don't quite remember. I think we must all have

waited—I know I did—for the darkness to clear away. I felt as though I had been hit on the head, but would be all right presently if people took no notice and stood off from me, and, above all things, gave me air—plenty of air. Tom's hand on mine prevented me from making an absolute exhibition of myself. You know how Ashdown frizzes my hair for functions—I was frizzed all over my head very prettily, and I friz through my frizzes; and while I was staring and feeling, oh! so deathly sick, I was distinctly conscious that my hair was tightening—Ashdown had frizzed it too well for it to stand on end—tightening and dragging my eyebrows up and up, so that I must have looked like an Aunt Sally.'

Mrs. Skittleworth laughed hysterically, and fluttered her very small hands.

A lean, unshorn, toadstool-coloured young gentleman in a blue cloak which would have been useless on horseback or in a high wind, a dead-leaf silk throat-wrap, and a sort of football jersey which was doing duty as a shirt, threw himself down on the divan and curled his legs into esoteric attitudes. Mrs. Skittleworth shook the quaver out of her voice, jumped three notes on the piano, and began as one in the middle of things generally.

'And so, you know, they invented a sort of combination garment for the lower classes—to save washing. It's very effective if it's worn too long, especially at the wristbands and round the neck, but then they provide a clout called a belcher to wear there, and you can get them for one and sevenpence halfpenny in Westbourne Grove. And they come here and do a lot

of good, and they are called Socialists. Of course, the uniform confuses the sexes. If it's a he, for instance, it's wearing its petticoats where it shouldn't, you know, and if it's a she it wouldn't wear a silk hat. But perhaps it's an exhibit, and if we ask it. . . .'

The young gentleman rose and regarded us with unholy eyes from the lunch balcony.

'A woman who cannot be vulgar on occasion does not know the meaning of True Deportment' said Mrs. Skittleworth. 'You should hear Mrs. Dornil bullying her governess. . . . And, where were we? Oh, yes, in that darkness of terror. I think we must have been there for years before we heard the rustle of the curtain and the servants' opening dialogue in the *Zoe-trope*. I wanted to scream at the top of my voice, but it occurred to me that I had been standing up for untold ages in the face of the house. So I sat down, and Tom began patting my hand in an absent-minded way and saying, "Poor little woman!" I remembered then that when I was fearfully ill and delirious on the Other Side of the World—no, I won't say how many years ago—Tom used to sit by my bed for days or weeks doing exactly the same thing; and whenever I would have come to life I was conscious of one hand being patted and "poored." I knew endearments of that sort weren't in place on the box-edge; but I couldn't take my hand away for all the world. I wanted Tom as I have never wanted him in my life—not even when they all thought I was dying. And the dear boy patted my hand—bless him! He was as white as a sheet. Then I began to think of Mother, exactly as a Frenchwoman would. I wondered where she was, and if this hideous

darkness was her portion in the other world, and I wanted to step into it and find out and drag her in across the edge of the box. I reflected that I should fall on somebody's head in the attempt, and I laughed aloud horribly in the one pathetic scene in the *Zoetrope*, where the Professor tells the little lodging-house servant the story of his life and his broken love-tale, and she cries and mops her face with the duster. And then I jumped, for I knew all the house was looking at me, and that upset the opera-glass, and I heard it fall and hit somebody below, and there was a scuffle, and every eye in everybody's head, I knew, was fixed on our unhappy, unhappy box. That was the incident of laughing and throwing glasses about that Mrs. Bletchley makes so much of. The thing dropped into the dark as a stone into water.'

'But why in the world didn't you all get up and run out, or complain or—or do something?'

'After the affair of the opera-glass? Mrs. Skittleworth's party romping in a box, dropping glasses, laughing, and then running out like children in a country church when they've tipped hymn-books from the gallery? *Never!* I may be introduced to the other world against my will, but I know my duty to this, as long as I am in it. I was praying for the first act to end, for I was afraid I could not stand the tension!'

'And the others?'

'You may well ask. I looked round when my own feelings were a little under control. What a blessed thing is a British education! All the Jew that ever cheated in Israel came out in Geissler's face. He was on the right of the box, half standing up in his chair

and gripping the edge with both hands till the plush plumped up in red gores between his fingers. He was not looking at the stage, but into the darkness, and I was more than conscious that he must be staring fiendishly at the opposite box. Staring like a maniac. I felt that those stares were returned. Oh, I felt pins and needles all over. I was sure that we were being watched while we were smitten with blindness! Complain? How could we complain? Can you go to an attendant at a theatre and say, "We can't see out of this box—a five-guinea box on the grand tier—the best in the house? If there is one place whence you ought to see all that is to be seen—" Mrs. Skittleworth nearly broke down at this point—'it's a box. I'll never take a box again. Give me stalls, or the gallery, where you are in touch with your neighbour and we all see ghosts together.'

*'Was there a ghost then?'*

'No, no, no—only their country: the place they had just left. But Geissler may have seen some. He looked hideous—as though he were being burned alive. His shoulders were cramped up to the back of his head; but I don't think he was afraid. He seemed to be in pain. Thinking of founders' shares possibly. Eva made the most painful exhibition of us all. Promise you won't tell, of course. She was down on the floor of the box—out of sight—her face hidden in a coat thrown over a chair. She had pressed herself into one corner like a frightened rabbit, and was praying. A box isn't a place to pray in. At least, not when the house is full. You know Eva's High-Church—extremely so; and even in her agony she was intoning. I stooped down

and tried to take one of her hands, and said: "Hush, dear, hush! Think of your dress!" but she only went on bleating, "Almighty and most merciful Father, we have erred and strayed from Thy ways like lost sheep," over and over again. She was kneeling on that little cheap silk of hers, and nothing in the wide world will ever get the dust out of it again; and she had bundled my heavy white "cloud" over her head to shut out the dark, and she looked just like a lost sheep. I might as well have spoken to one. I am very sorry for Eva.'

'And the others?'

'They had arrived at a most complete understanding, and that nearly made me scream. I felt that I was responsible for everything—Chaos included. Clara was in the Evans boy's arms, totally and completely at the back of the box to the left; and to this day I cannot tell why all the house didn't see them. They must have fancied it was the Day of Judgment. They were murmuring things that you oughtn't to hear, and I honestly believe they never saw the darkness after they had explained themselves.'

'Poor Mrs. Dormil!'

'It wasn't my fault. I only wished them to improve their acquaintance with each other. Am I responsible if the Powers of Darkness are leagued against me to precipitate matters? Yes, they were in each other's arms expecting immediate translation. What I saw and said passed in a flash, though I have been so long telling it. The rest was interminable waiting for the first act to end, Eva praying on the floor, and the house rocking with laughter at the jokes, Geissler

glaring into Tophet, Tom patting my hand, Clara and the Evans boy in another world—bless them!—and I playing propriety for them all. Taking an interest in the play in order to prove that I saw it all, and was as much amused as anybody, clapping when the unseen hosts clapped, and smirking when I felt it was time to smirk. Yes. I did! I was almost obsequiously attentive to the *Zoetrope*, and I flatter myself that even the Bletchley woman will admit that I behaved perfectly.’

‘Mrs. Skittleworth,’ I said, in a voice broken with emotion, ‘I have long admired and respected you beyond any human being alive. I now worship you with fear and trembling. Men have won the Victoria Cross for less than that.’

Mrs. Skittleworth was graciously pleased to bow her head, always with one eye on the door. She continued:—

‘Then the curtain went down, and we fled. I have a dim recollection of flying into the cloak-room screaming like a peacock: “My things! My things! My things!” Eva was close behind me. We fell together into the tire-woman’s arms. Luckily she was big, and ready with her blandishments at once. She said: “There! there! there! Never mind. ’Ere’s your cloak, mum”: and I answered thickly: “Yes, yes, yes. Of course—of course. Too hot, too cold: very fine weather indeed.” She gave us both the best thing available, and on the spot. It *proved* the existence of a conspiracy. It was brandy-and-soda—strong! You should have seen Eva and me gulping it down like washerwomen, while that dear tall Clara drifted about



like a saint in a holy dream, conscious that there might have been something wrong somewhere, but more conscious that things were quite right.

'We skipped down the passages. We dared not run, but we skipped; and Geissler and Eva went off in separate cabs. I know he volunteered to see her home, for I caught one gesture of hers that would have made the fortune of a tragedy actress. Villain as I am convinced he is, I admire that man for his nerve. Now comes the proof of the conspiracy. Our brougham was on hand when we came out. Generally Jobbins retires to a public-house, and Tom has to prance through the puddles and drag him out. But he was waiting, which was a greater miracle than anything else. I spoke to him about it the next day, complimenting him on his virtue.

' "Well, mum," he said, "I wouldn't ha' kep' the pore 'orses 'cept that every man of them in the theatre, an' the policeman, an' all the lot sez to me that you'd be out at the end of the first act. And so you was, mum, an' it was a good job I waited."

"That is the only approach to an explanation that I have been able to arrive at—that, and the fact that Geissler got the box for twenty-five shillings. The entire theatre staff of the Inner Sepulchre must know all about it, and yet . . . Can you believe it? Do you believe? Try to speak the truth. Geissler has never given any sign of his existence to me since that night. Eva has gone out of town, and Clara and the Evans boy . . . you see. Somehow I feel as though I were responsible for everything. You *do* believe, don't you?"

'Implicitly,' I replied. 'If *you* cannot see a thing

which is in front of you, who am I to dissent? Of course, I believe. You intend to take no further steps?’

‘None whatever. I’ll never set foot in that theatre again. That’s all; and Tom doesn’t like me to talk about it. Clara won’t speak either, I’m certain. She imagines it was sent from Heaven to help the Evans boy to propose to her.’

‘Poor Mrs. Dormil!’

‘Yes, and here, for my many sins, she comes, without Tom or the other man. Fly! Catch Miss Dormil and walk ostentatiously with her while I lure the old lady to the food-trough. The Evans boy can escape unseen if he has any sense.’

But at that crisis he had not, and they both glowered at me when I found them in the stained-glass alcove; and I had to explain matters apart to the Evans boy, and he left me with the air of a baffled conspirator; and though I was dying to ask Miss Dormil twenty thousand questions, she being wrapped up in her own vain imaginings, I could never get any farther than:—

‘What do you think of the Arts and Crafts?’



THE LAMENTABLE COMEDY OF  
WILLOW WOOD

1890



## THE LAMENTABLE COMEDY OF WILLOW WOOD

O ye, all ye that walk in Willow Wood,  
That walk with hollow faces burning white;  
What fathom-depth of soul-struck widowhood,  
What long, what longer hours, one life-long night,  
Ere ye again, who so in vain have wooed  
Your last hope lost, who so in vain invite  
Your lips to that their unforgotten food,  
Ere ye, ere ye again shall see the light!

D. G. ROSETTI.

### PERSONS CHIEFLY CONCERNED

HE (a man).

SHE (a woman).

SCENE.—*Grey Downs, late in the afternoon; a sea-fog coming over the cliffs.*

HE (*Roan horse, second-best saddlery, double-mouthed snaffle, nose-band, no spurs, crop*). It feels as though it were going to rain. Suppose we . . .

SHE (*Bay horse, third-best habit, cloth cap, double bridle, martingale, and worn gauntlets*). I've nothing on that can spoil, and there's nothing to go back for before dinner. I *must* say the Deeleys are the dearest hosts in the world. Fancy them letting me take out Mickey. I always thought he was specially reserved for Mrs. Deeley.

THE LAMENTABLE COMEDY OF WILLOW WOOD

HE. (*Aside.*) Exactly! Gets the pick of the stable—hauls a man out of the smoking-room, and *he* gets—hold, you brute!—a yorking hog of a hack with the mouth of a turnstile and the manners of a steam-engine, and so must wait her pleasure. (*Aloud.*) Yes, it's one of the nicest country-houses I know, but look at this beast. The head-groom doesn't love me.

SHE. (*Aside.*) Hands of a butcher, if you only knew it. (*Aloud.*) I'm afraid you have been unlucky. But misfortunes never come singly. It was your fault for loafing so aggressively in the smoking-room.

HE. As how?

SHE. I saw you from the garden, and it seemed that you might just as well take me out as loll on a sofa. So I suggested to Mrs. Deeley—and there really was no one else available. (*Aside.*) Mustn't sulk for half an hour and not expect to be paid out.

HE. Thank you. I had supposed there wasn't. They all went out after lunch. Er—er! have you noticed the deep interest that the young take in Norman ruins when two can look at them at the same time? It's natural, I suppose. (*Aside.*) I know she saw young Oulthorp go out with Miss Massing.

SHE. (*Aside.*) To my address, but clumsy. (*Aloud.*) Yes. I suggested their going.

HE. (*Aside.*) What an atrocious fib! I believe she sleeps regularly after lunch, and I know she never lets Oulthorp look at Miss Massing. (*Aloud.*) Well, shall we canter on and pick up our archaeologists?

SHE (*sweetly*). Can't you hold him in then? He is dancing a little bit; but perhaps you are irritating his poor dear mouth?

THE LAMENTABLE COMEDY OF WILLOW WOOD

HE. Poor dear mouth! He never had such a thing in his life.

SHE. But he must have some feelings, and it is hardly worth while harrowing them because your own are upset.

HE. You are saddling me with all sorts of sin that never came into my head. Of course I'm delighted to be your escort.

SHE. Of course. What else could you say?

HE. This only. If it has seemed good to you to drag out an almost entire stranger for a ride in this particularly sloppy country, I don't see that it is worth while squabbling with him. (*Aside.*) It's a strong face and I like it, but I hate having my riding scoffed at.

SHE. You are a remarkably plain-spoken person.

HE. I'm afraid I was led into it. Also I'll confess I did sulk.

SHE. I know you did, and I don't wonder. After all, it must be a bore to entertain a woman who—how was it?—'goes to sleep over her soup and looks as though she fed on bolsters.' Eh?

HE. (*Aside.*) Oh, damn!

SHE. You should never become confidential in the smoking-room with Mr. Dollin. He tells his wife everything, and she, not being too wise, tells me.

HE. (*Aside.*) I wonder if this is her method of being engaging. It is monotonous. (*Aloud.*) I deny every word of it. Dollin misunderstood.—Did Mrs. Dollin tell you everything that was said in the smoking-room?

SHE. (*Aside.*) Curiously alike men are when you make them uncomfortable. (*Aloud.*) Thank you. I



THE LAMENTABLE COMEDY OF WILLOW WOOD

know what you mean. Yes, she did; and I must say that you men might find some better amusement than making fun of poor Mr. Oulthorp.

HE. (*Aside.*) I thought so. (*Aloud, stiffly.*) Pardon me, but was it for this that I was brought out?

SHE. No. But since you are here I may as well speak. Is it fair?

HE. There's a certain amount of frivolity in a smoking-room, and I suppose Oulthorp gets his share like every one else.

SHE. But he doesn't like it.

HE. I'm afraid that makes no difference. (*Aside.*) This is a revelation. I object to being called to account like a schoolboy. (*Aloud.*) And you know Oulthorp is not very wise.

SHE. In that he is specially devoted to me?

HE. I never said that.

SHE. But what do you think?

HE. Nothing. Why should I? Am I his keeper—or yours? Indeed I was no worse than the others.

SHE. No worse than the others! There speaks the man. Will you listen to me for a minute?

HE. It seems that I was invited to that end. (*Aside.*) If I sent my heel into the beast I know he'd bolt. Question is, could I pull him up this side the sunset. (*Aloud.*) Frankly, you know, I never understood what you saw in young Oulthorp—I mean what your object was in taking him up. As I said just now, he is not over wise, nor, for the matter of that, very amusing.

SHE (*after a pause*). Have you ever been put on a pedestal and worshipped?

HE. No.

THE LAMENTABLE COMEDY OF WILLOW WOOD

SHE. Have you ever known what it was to feel everything you said or did of more importance to one person than anything else in the world—to find yourself treated as absolutely perfect?—

HE. Poor beggar! So bad as that, was he? (*Aside.*) I wonder if the beast would bolt. I don't like this talk.

SHE. But have you?

HE. N-no. Why should I?

SHE. How can I tell? And have you ever found all that trust, all that belief, and all that adoration bore you beyond words?

HE (*as his heel goes home*). Come round, you brute! Come round!

SHE. And yet have you felt that you wouldn't give it up for anybody—that it was, somehow, a refuge from yourself, when you were afraid to think or remember? Can't you see? He believes in me absolutely.

HE (*looking between his horse's ears*). Um!

SHE (*quickly*). Has he said anything . . . in the smoking-room?

HE. Certainly not. (*Aside.*) Dollin is a fool, but he has evidently had sense enough not to tell everything.

SHE. Then what do you mean?

HE. Let us look this thing in the face since you will insist on scolding me. Will you do young Oulthorp any good?

SHE. I shall make a man of him at least.

HE. I fancied Miss Massing was more than equal to that little business.

SHE. She is at perfect liberty—when I have finished.

HE. Which will be——?

THE LAMENTABLE COMEDY OF WILLOW WOOD

SHE. When he goes of his own accord.

HE. Have you courage to wait for the end, then?

SHE. I don't think you quite understand. He bores me—horribly.

HE. So I am willing to believe.

SHE. Too good of you, I'm sure, to take the trouble. . . . It is only because he thinks me sweet and perfect. It is not (*in a low voice and slowly*), it is not—that—I care; I don't. But I shall do him no harm—indeed I shan't.

HE. I have nothing to do with the affair.

SHE. Yes, you have. They'll listen to you for ever in the smoking-room. You have influence over them. Why can't you keep them amused, instead of helping to make fun of him? You tell them things—I know you do—for I hear of them from Mrs. Dollin.

HE. (*Aside.*) Seems to me that Dollin is making a burial-service to be said over his own grave. (*Aloud.*) I never understood it was my mission to amuse a country-house for the sake of young Oulthorp. And, really, do you think that a—a—regard that cannot stand a little chaff now and then——?

SHE. Oh, it will go fast enough under any circumstances. Only—only I don't want to lose it before I must.

HE (*softly, looking at her*). Forgive me. I'm so sorry.

SHE. Do I look like a woman who needs pity? Why should you give it me?—I don't want it.

HE. Because of what must have gone before.

SHE. I don't know what you mean.

HE. Don't you? Would you like me to explain?

SHE. No. But what do you mean?

THE LAMENTABLE COMEDY OF WILLOW WOOD

HE. Nothing. I ask no questions. Only, as a general rule, I imagine a woman does not take a deep interest in the blind adoration that a boy like Oulthorp gives—a boy for whom she does not care either—unless she has lost something much—much—more important. . . . But perhaps you are the exception?

SHE (*bowing her head*). That's enough. I am the rule. . . . And now do you understand me?

HE. Less than ever, to tell you the truth.

SHE. Shall I tell you the truth for a change?

HE. At your own risk. Remember, I can guess at the outlines, and you may hate me because you have told me. (*Aside.*) I wonder if she tells everybody. Couldn't be, 'r else I should have heard something about her in the smoking-room. What a chin it is!

SHE. Would you care if I hated you?

HE. Not a bit. It might worry you a little. Well, tell me.

SHE (*after a pause*). It's—it's difficult. There was—and I couldn't help it—and I had my warnings—lots of women told me about him, and I knew that he wasn't to be trusted, and I knew that I was the only one who knew that. So I was sure of myself—and I was, you know. But I did care—everything, in every way. That was why, perhaps, it ended as it did. After seven years. My God, after seven years!

HE. And what did you do?

SHE (*simply*). Said 'Fank 'oo,' and went away smiling.

HE. You!

SHE. Yes, me! Why shouldn't I? It was everything in the world to me. And when it finished I hadn't the heart to complain.

THE LAMENTABLE COMEDY OF WILLOW WOOD

HE. You don't look like a person who would be grateful for being treated in that way. And after?

SHE. I continued to exist beautifully—with variations.

HE. Of what kind?

SHE. Oh, pictures and the poor. 'Specially the poor. You can think sometimes if you sit alone painting. If you slumgullion you can't think. Many others have found out that trick, and the poor owe much to it. Then the boy—young Oulthorp came in; he was some sort of a rest. But I have found that I have a double brain that does its own thinking whatever I do. Did you ever find that?

HE (*incautiously*). Yes, worse luck.

SHE. (*Aside.*) I knew the fire had gone over his face. (*Aloud and very slowly.*) Pleasant, isn't it—to find all the sorrow, and all the sacrifice—

HE (*hoarsely, looking into the fog*). There's no sacrifice. I'll swear there isn't.

SHE. —*all* the sacrifice, the care and the tenderness, the forethought, the comprehension, and—and all the rest of it go for nothing just because one person has grown tired.

HE (*with a shiver*). For goodness' sake let's talk of something else.

SHE (*bitterly*). What shall we talk about? Nice things—pretty things? Books and pictures and plays? I'm quite ready. You begin.

HE (*after a pause*). Don't think the conversation led up to nice things exactly.

SHE. How strange! Well?

HE. Er—does the—does the pain last for ever?

THE LAMENTABLE COMEDY OF WILLOW WOOD

SHE. I don't know. I've only had four years of it—every day and all day long.

HE (*feebly*). Not really?

SHE. If—if the other thing was real, this is. It begins when I wake and it ends when I sleep—and it begins again when I wake again.

HE. How you must hate the man!

SHE. Worse than that. I only hated a little in the beginning. Now I am beginning not to care. It's all over—all except the pain, and so, you see, it's doubly worthless. Believe me, if you were to cross the road now under my feet, I shouldn't even turn my head to— Good God! What's that?

*A shepherd jumps into the road from a bank. Mickey shies.*

HE. Drop your hands! He's going to bolt! Gone, by Jove! Do I follow?

SHE (*over her shoulder*). Yes. I can just hold him. Come along! Where does this road end?

HE. London, if you go far enough. Can you take a pull at your brute?

SHE. I'll try. (*Leans over.*) No! Wait till a hill tires him. I'm not afraid. Who'd have thought it in a quiet, steady . . . I believe I *shall* be afraid in a minute. Ow! There goes my hair loose.

HE. Shall I lean over and take a pull at him?

SHE (*gasping and pulling*). No! Bring him down if you did. He's coming in—a—little—bit. Ouch! That's better. Steady, Mickey darling. There's nothing to be afraid of. Softly, old man. (*Pulls horse into a canter.*) I didn't like that.

HE. Which? The man that appeared?

THE LAMENTABLE COMEDY OF WILLOW WOOD

SHE. No. Trying to ride away from myself. We might have ended in a quarry.

HE. It was the other beast behind him that drove Mickey mad. The best of horses get excited sometimes. By the way, have I to go back and pick up hairpins?

SHE. Poor thing—no. I'll bundle it up under my cap somehow with the few that remain to me. (*Aside.*) This man is a man. (*Aloud.*) I wish people wouldn't pop up so suddenly.

HE. He came just in time to show how little you cared.

SHE. No, that was Mickey's fault.

HE. Even if you caught Mickey short by the head and drove your spur into him?

SHE. I deny the spur. The other thing maybe. (*Watching his face.*) It seems to please you, somehow.

HE. No—I don't think so. But you *do* care for that man even now?

SHE. Yes.

HE. In spite of everything?

SHE. In spite of everything—yes.

HE. Good Lord!

SHE. I don't think He has anything to do with it. He doesn't even help one to forget. He leaves that to the Bambino.

HE. That reminds me. Since we have gone so far, I shouldn't build too much on young Oulthorp's absolute devotion.

SHE. What do you mean? Julia Massing?

HE. Yes, I think so.

SHE (*absently*). Little liar! He's like you, though.

HE. Why? *I* never adored you.

THE LAMENTABLE COMEDY OF WILLOW WOOD

SHE. No, but you have lied to some one else. I am certain of it.

HE. And if I did, what have you gained by keeping faith?

SHE. Seven years of life at least. I am only paying for them now.

HE. Is the price too high—are you sorry?

SHE. Yes, I am sorry—bitterly sorry—that I ever knew him. There's no dignity of tragedy to console me. I am sorry, and I laugh at myself for being sorry.

HE. But if you had the chance over again what would you do?

SHE. Why do you ask—why do you want to find out? So that you may measure another woman's pain by mine; because you have treated some woman as——. Is that it?

HE. I—I don't know.

SHE. But *I* do (*edging in towards him*). Look at me. Even I—even I am Beatrice! That line at the corner of the eyes comes from crying—doctors will tell you so—crying till there are no more tears to cry. That little horseshoe in the forehead—now considered fascinating—comes from lying staring wide awake without shutting your eyes, night after night, thinking, thinking, thinking everything over again from the beginning. You can get that mark for life after three nights' pain. I have it. Those are the outward and visible signs—some of them. The mouth, too—— (*Leaning to the off side.*)

HE (*dully*). Yes, I see.

SHE. You don't. All you are thinking of is——

HE. God forbid!



THE LAMENTABLE COMEDY OF WILLOW WOOD

SHE (*leaning further*). My dear sir, it would be quite enough if I (*softening*) gave permission.

HE. No, thank you. Not this dance.

SHE (*resettling herself in her saddle*). Then I believe you do care for her.

HE. (*Aside*.) A chance missed. (*Aloud*.) Pooh! that's no proof. But you needn't continue your explanation.

SHE. I could say such a lot if I chose.

HE (*leading towards the cliff's edge*). Go on, then. You were talking about mental symptoms.

SHE. I was, but I won't go on. (*Aside, to herself*.) It seems to me that the fog or something is seriously affecting your brain, dear. Never mind. Dinner at eight, two gongs, and a fat man to take me in. Let us be thankful, O Civilisation, for all thy mercies.

HE. I want you to, though.

SHE. Then I will. (*Aside*.) You will have it, and I would have let you off because you understood—a little. (*Aloud*.) There are one thousand different ways of going to perdition. She will probably choose the nine hundred and ninety-nine that I have not taken. And it will be your fault. She may even bless you later for setting her on one of those roads. Does that hurt sufficiently?

HE. I have known pleasanter things. Well?

SHE. There's no more to say. You can hurt yourself better than I can hurt you. How long was your affair for?

HE. Five years.

SHE. Who ended it?

HE. It ended itself.

SHE. Sweet child of nature! That wrought *my* only woe. In other words, it was your vanity—as it was his.

THE LAMENTABLE COMEDY OF WILLOW WOOD

HE. (*Aside.*) My turn now. (*Aloud.*) Perhaps your friend got tired.

SHE. It is very possible. I was everything and more than everything. Now I am nothing and less than nothing. But *I* never cheated in word or deed.

HE. Did he, then?

SHE. I was thinking of *her*.

HE (*wincing*). I can do my own thinking there, thank you.

SHE. I fancied from your invitation you wanted an assistant.

HE. Good Heavens! What is the use of two rats in a burning bucket biring at each other? Let's swear eternal peace.

SHE. Because you are getting hurt—eh? I am hurt day after day, hour after hour, minute after minute—but you only while you are talking to me—because you're a man, and therefore a coward.

HE. And therefore a coward. It's a consoling knowledge. (*He edges horse towards cliff's edge.*)

SHE. Doesn't it make you want to swear at me?

HE (*reining up and looking at the beach below*). No. Anything but that just now. Can you see down there, through the fog?

SHE. Yes! It's a remarkably pretty view. (*Sees Oulthorp and Miss Massing, side by side.*) Aah!

HE. So much for Norman ruins.

SHE. Thank you. So one of them thinks. But what a finished liar Oulthorp must be! If he had only spoken the truth! (*To herself.*) Why, only to-day . . .

HE. I daresay he had a natural hesitation about approaching you on the subject.

THE LAMENTABLE COMEDY OF WILLOW WOOD

SHE. He didn't understand. (*Critically and peering down.*) He is kissing Julia Massing.

HE. Why not?

SHE. Why not, indeed? At this very moment, by the light of the knowledge you taught her, *she* may be— (*His horse plunges away from the cliff*).

HE (*administering correction with the crop*). That engagement will be given out to-night, in their faces, and announced at breakfast to-morrow. You'll have to congratulate him.

SHE. If you had only kept the smoking-room amused, I might have had three days more of Oulthorp's 'eternal devotion.' That's all.

HE. Remember, I only came into your councils this afternoon—late.

SHE. And we have done each other an immense amount of good since?

HE. We have sympathised at least.

SHE (*throat-note in voice*). There's nothing like sympathy—*holy* sympathy, is there?

HE. Nothing. Especially when one is in real trouble.

SHE. So sweet, when a man lays his hand on yours—quite by accident—and says that he is prepared to sympathise with you to any extent—

HE. Ho! Ho! They do that, too.

SHE. You know. And the next minute you find that the hand has become an arm, and you are standing with your back to the mantelpiece spitting 'Sir-r!' like an angry pussy-cat, and asking what in the world he means. For comprehension and disinterestedness, give me the sympathy of a man.

HE (*tenderly*). All the same, I am sorry for you—dear.

THE LAMENTABLE COMEDY OF WILLOW WOOD

SHE. I didn't catch the last word. I'll believe the others.

HE. That's enough, then. I *am* sorry.

SHE. Because you see in me the best possible result of what you may have done to *her*; and you don't like it? Sorrow? What use is sorrow to me? If all the hosts of Heaven came down and said they were sorry for me, I could only give them tea, and tell them that they bored me. They should have set things right in the beginning.

HE. Blame the poor little cherubs, of course! I thought you were more honest than that!

SHE. I am only talking nonsense—you know what I mean. We have no right to complain. But we do.

HE. It takes a great deal to make people understand that if they break the Tables of Stone the pieces cut their feet.

SHE. And then they find out that they mustn't show the pain. It isn't pretty, and it doesn't amuse drawing-rooms. If it did, I should be happy to scream for hours like a steam-engine.

HE. Which reminds me—by way of stoking—I wonder what there'll be for dinner to-night.

SHE. The first and last dish is Mr. Warbstow, who explains to us that we attach too much importance to the Deity. I yawn.

HE. Mrs. Deeley has a gift for collecting queer people at her troughs.

SHE. And none queerer than our two sweet selves. Fancy her face if she could listen now!

HE. She would be truly grieved. Don't you think we might try to change the conversation?

THE LAMENTABLE COMEDY OF WILLOW WOOD

SHE. I forgot. I have my punishment here now and yours comes later. Very well. What shall we talk about? The fog?

HE (*after a pause*). I don't see why you should be so certain of your own luck. I am punished too.

SHE. Only a little—for just as long as you are talking to me. Wait the hereafter.

HE (*wiping his forehead*). But surely I am punished now. If I had killed anyone it couldn't be worse.

SHE. Killing's nothing. You may have done exactly the opposite. In which case, your torment will be heavier. Think of it for a minute. I was killed: and I am not grateful to the man who killed me. *She* may thank you yet for waking her to life. Does that hurt enough?

HE. Enough to pay for all.

SHE. Not unless you keep on thinking. One spasm of agony does not pay. You must think.

HE. I—I dare not.

SHE. Exactly. I dare because I must. You don't because you have other things to do. Therefore you will be dealt with later. As my murderer will be.

HE. How do you know?

SHE. I don't—and to tell the truth I don't care—as far as you're concerned.

HE. I know you don't, but you needn't have said so.

SHE. What mercy do you deserve? If you suffer as you say you do, so much the better for you. Oh, dear God! if I could believe that *he* felt for one little minute only a tithe of what I feel every hour I'd die contented.

HE. Have you never tried to go through the door, then?

THE LAMENTABLE COMEDY OF WILLOW WOOD

SHE. Once. A year ago.

HE. How?

SHE. The silver cigarette-case and the graduated tubes, of course. Is there any other way? And—and when I had sat down—I was in that old black frock you spilt some coffee over the other night—I—I thought, when it would be all over, of a hand keeping me down in the chair, and saying—‘Think. Go on thinking, dear. There’s all eternity to think in. So it seemed to me I should gain nothing.

HE. An eternity of sitting still in a comfortable chair and thinking.

SHE. That was only my notion. We’re told that God’s mercies are infinite. There may be more horrible tortures.

HE. Which be they?

SHE. For you? Oh, watching her—perhaps. I don’t think anything could make me do more than giggle. My punishment is now—now—now! Here, at the Deeleys’ and anywhere else, and the only pauses allowed are like the vinegar to give me fresh strength to feel. It’s cruel.

HE (*laughing*). Wages o’ sin, mum, wages o’ sin.

SHE. It’s not fair. If the wages were death I’d have claimed them long ago—long ago.

HE. On the strict understanding that you went to sleep immediately afterwards. Isn’t that a little cowardly?

SHE. Oh, help me! Am I to endure for ever?

HE. As long as the Law endures. You have given me the same comfort, and—it’s very cold. (*A long pause, during which he watches her face.*)

THE LAMENTABLE COMEDY OF WILLOW WOOD

SHE (*dropping right hand on the pommel-head*). Let's protest! Let's rebel!

HE. Against what, and which, and how?

SHE. Everything that makes us what we are. Lost faith—lost hope—lost belief—and—and all the rest.

HE. Then isn't there anything to pick out of the wreck?

SHE. If you give everything nothing remains.

HE. Are you so sure?

SHE. As sure as you are.

HE. Every moment tells me that—I am not sure.

SHE. (*Aside*.) How like a man! (*Aloud*.) That is the last five moments—only a little feeling born of pique and longing for the impossible.

HE. It is more. I am certain of it. All things have their first five minutes though they go on for centuries—

SHE (*Aside*.) It grows amusing. He is almost interesting.

HE. —We both stand at the same starting-point; we have gone through the same fire. Doesn't it draw us together?

SHE (*with a little laugh*). How? In what? In that we have both come out on the other side with the life burnt out? The sympathy of cinders? Too late, it is all too late.

HE. I don't believe it's possible to suffer for—  
(*Mickey shies violently and disappears into the fog*.) What's that—where have you gone to?

SHE (*from the fog*). A gipsy fire, I think. Burned out. What a stupid horse! He must have seen that a dozen times.

THE LAMENTABLE COMEDY OF WILLOW WOOD

HE. The fog made it look large. Come back.  
(*Voice rising.*) Oh, come back to me, little woman!

SHE. I never came. How can I come back?

HE. Then come now.

SHE. Mickey's 'fraid.

HE. Cut his soul out!

SHE. And make him happier than myself. No. (*To horse.*) Come along, Mickey. There's nothing to be scared at. Only ashes, little white ashes. (*Cantering through the fog; leaning off side and holding out her hand.*) I am tired, so tired—and I am here. We-ell?

HE (*taking her hand and dropping it*). No use. It doesn't bite.

SHE. I thought it wouldn't, and now I know. All things are finished, there is no more fire, no more life, only the pretending, and the pain, that is all. This is part of the punishment. God help us both.

HE. He can't. But I hoped somehow that we might pick up some pieces sometime.

SHE. We could, if you could tell me one oath that I have not heard from *his* lips, or I could give you one promise that you had not heard from *hers*. And yet you were prepared to risk it?

HE. I am still—because you understand.

SHE. I think I understand too well. But you shall enlighten me. Suppose, for a minute, that you really love me.

HE. I have supposed that for some minutes already.

SHE. Then say it in a loud and cheerful voice. Can you?

HE. Yes. I love you.

SHE (*quietly*). Do you know anything of the state



THE LAMENTABLE COMEDY OF WILLOW WOOD

of Mickey's hocks? (*Aside.*) I know if you put your hand behind the cantle he rears on end.

HE. Damn Mickey's hocks!

SHE. No, something quite different. (*Puts hand behind cantle—Mickey rears.*) Now recant quickly. Swear by the holiest thing you know—swear by *her* life—up, Mickey!—that you'd let me and this dear beast—doesn't he stand up beautifully and snort?—drown or die, if you could get her back for half a minute. Quick! recant, or I'll pull Mickey over backwards.

HE (*wearily*). Let him down. You needn't have thrown in the circus. It's true.

SHE. By Her life, is it true?

HE. By Her life.

SHE (*as Mickey drops on his forelegs*). Then you are—

HE. I am what I am. For pity's sake, let me be. Let's go back. (*Oulthorp and Miss Massing trot past in fog.*)

SHE. Very good. Keep behind these two and contemplate the rewards of virtue. We'll go slowly in order that we may appreciate the things we have lost.

HE. Indeed we won't. We're going to ride as fast as we can.

SHE. You have no spur.

HE. He'll answer to the whip, and you can rowel enough for both. Take him up and we'll go.

(*They go.*)

SHE. We mustn't turn into the Deeleys' grounds at this rate. Pull up, and I promise not to say another word till we get in.

HE. On your honour?

SHE. You swear by strange gods—yes, if it will please you.

THE LAMENTABLE COMEDY OF WILLOW WOOD

*(She keeps the promise till they are coming up the carriage-drive.)*

SHE. Oh, the girls have been singing all the afternoon. I wish I'd stayed in to assist. Listen!

*(They rein up by the shrubbery.)*

*(Contralto VOICE: from the music-room; piano and violin accompaniment.)*

'I am lost to faith, I am lost to hope,  
I am lost to all that should make me fain—  
I have lost my way in the light of day,  
God send that I find it soon again!'

HE *(taking her hand)*. Then there is one chance after all?

SHE. No; *(aside)* you threw it away by the fire. *(Aloud.)* Listen for the next verse. I know the song. It's a new setting.

VOICE:

'The sun went down an hour ago,  
I wonder if I face toward home.  
If I lost my way in the light of day  
How shall I find it now night is come?—  
Now night is come!'

SHE *(dropping from her horse)*. Think! And—go on thinking!



ON DRY-COW FISHING AS A FINE ART

1890



## ON DRY-COW FISHING AS A FINE ART

**I**T MUST BE CLEARLY UNDERSTOOD that I am not at all proud of this performance. In Florida men sometimes hook and land, on rod and tackle a little finer than a steam-crane and chain, a mackerel-like fish called 'tarpon,' which sometimes run up to one hundred and twenty pounds. Those men stuff their captures and exhibit them in glass cases and become puffed up. On the Columbia River sturgeon of one hundred and fifty pounds weight are taken with the line. When the sturgeon is hooked the line is fixed to the nearest pine-tree or steamboat wharf, and after some hours or days the sturgeon surrenders himself if the pine or the line do not give way. The owner of the line then states on oath that he has caught a sturgeon, and he, too, becomes proud.

These things are mentioned to show how light a creel will fill the soul of a man with vanity. I am not proud. It is nothing to me that I have hooked and played seven hundred pounds weight of quarry. All my desire is to place the little affair on record before the mists of memory breed the miasma of exaggeration.

The minnow cost eighteenpence. It was a beautiful quill minnow, and the tackle-maker said that it could be thrown as a fly. He guaranteed further in respect to the triangles—it glittered with triangles—that, if necessary, the minnow would hold a horse. A man who speaks too much truth is just as offensive as a man who speaks too little. None the less, owing to

the defective condition of the present law of libel, the tackle-maker's name must be withheld.

The minnow and I and a rod went down to a brook to attend to a small jack who lived between two clumps of flags in the most cramped swim that he could select. As a proof that my intentions were strictly honourable, I may mention that I was using a light split-cane rod—very dangerous if the line runs through weeds, but very satisfactory in clean water, inasmuch as it keeps a steady strain on the fish and prevents him from taking liberties. I had an old score against the jack. He owed me two live-bait already, and I had reason to suspect him of coming upstream and interfering with a little bleak-pool under a horse-bridge which lay entirely beyond his sphere of legitimate influence. Observe, therefore, that my tackle and my motives pointed clearly to jack, and jack alone; though I knew there were monstrous big perch in the brook.

The minnow was thrown as a fly several times, and, owing to my peculiar, and hitherto unpublished, methods of fly-throwing, nearly six pennyworth of the triangles came off, either in my coat-collar, or my thumb, or the back of my hand. Fly fishing is a very gory amusement.

The jack was not interested in the minnow, but towards twilight a boy opened a gate of the field and let in some twenty or thirty cows and half-a-dozen cart-horses, and they were all very much interested. The horses galloped up and down the field and shook the banks, but the cows walked solidly and breathed heavily, as people breathe who appreciate the Fine Arts.

By this time I had given up all hope of catching my

jack fairly, but I wanted the live-bait and bleak account settled before I went away, even if I tore up the bottom of the brook. Just before I had quite made up my mind to borrow a tin of chloride of lime from the farm-house—another triangle had fixed itself in my fingers—I made a cast which for pure skill, exact judgment of distance, and perfect coincidence of hand and eye and brain, would have taken every prize at a bait-casting tournament. That was the first half of the cast. The second was postponed because the quill minnow would not return to its proper place, which was under the lobe of my left ear. It had done thus before, and I supposed it was in collision with a grass tuft, till I turned around and saw a large red-and-white bald-faced cow trying to rub what would be withers in a horse with her nose. She looked at me reproachfully, and her look said as plainly as words: ‘The season is too far advanced for gadflies. What is this strange disease?’

I replied, ‘Madam, I must apologise for an unwarrantable liberty on the part of my minnow, but if you will have the goodness to keep still until I can reel in, we will adjust this little difficulty.’

I reeled in very swiftly and cautiously, but she would not wait. She put her tail in the air and ran away. It was a purely involuntary motion on my part: I struck. Other anglers may contradict me, but I firmly believe that if a man had foul-hooked his best friend through the nose, and that friend ran, the man would strike by instinct. I struck, therefore, and the reel began to sing just as merrily as though I had caught my jack. But had it been a jack, the minnow would have come



away. I told the tackle-maker this much afterwards, and he laughed and made allusions to the guarantee about holding a horse.

Because it was a fat innocent she-cow that had done me no harm, the minnow held—held like an anchor-fluke in coral moorings—and I was forced to dance up and down an interminable field very largely used by cattle. It was like salmon-fishing in a nightmare. I took gigantic strides, and every stride found me up to my knees in marsh. But the cow seemed to skate along the squashy green by the brook, to skim over the miry backwaters, and to float like a mist through the patches of rush that squirted black filth over my face. Sometimes we whirled through a mob of her friends—there were no friends to help me—and they looked scandalized; and sometimes a young and frivolous cart-horse would join in the chase for a few miles, and kick solid pieces of mud into my eyes; and through all the mud, the milky smell of kine, the rush and the smother, I was aware of my own voice crying: ‘Pussy, pussy, pussy! Pretty pussy! Come along then, puss-cat!’ You see, it is so hard to speak to a cow properly, and she would not listen—no, she would not listen.

Then she stopped, and the moon got up behind the pollards to tell the cows to lie down; but they were all on their feet, and they came trooping to see. And she said, ‘I haven’t had my supper, and I want to go to bed, and please don’t worry me.’ And I said, ‘The matter has passed beyond any apology. There are three courses open to you, my dear lady. If you’ll have the common sense to walk up to my creel I’ll

get my knife and you shall have all the minnow. Or, again, if you'll let me move across to your near side, instead of keeping me so coldly on your off side, the thing will come away in one tweak. I can't pull it out over your withers. Better still, go to a post and rub it out, dear. It won't hurt much, but if you think I am going to lose my rod to please you, you are mistaken.' And she said, 'I don't understand what you are saying. I am very, very unhappy.' And I said, 'It's all your fault for trying to fish. Do go to the nearest gate-post, you nice fat thing, and rub it out.'

For a moment I fancied she was taking my advice. She ran away, and I followed. But all the other cows came with us in a bunch, and I thought of Phæthon trying to drive the Chariot of the Sun, and 'Texan cowboys killed by stampeding cattle, and 'Green Grow the Rushes, oh!' and Solomon and Job, and loosing 'the bands of Orion,' and hooking Behemoth, and Wordsworth who talks about whirling round with rocks and stones and trees, and 'Here we go round the Mulberry Bush,' and 'Pippin Hill,' and 'Hey Diddle Diddle,' and most especially the top joint of my rod. Again she stopped—but nowhere in the neighbourhood of my knife—and her sisters stood moon-faced round her. It seemed that she might, now, run towards me, and I looked for a tree, because cows are very different from salmon, who only jump against the line, and never molest the fisherman. What followed was worse than any direct attack. She began to buck-jump, to stand on her head and her tail alternately, to leap into the sky, all four feet together, and to dance on her hind legs. It was so violent and im-

proper, so desperately unladylike, that I was inclined to blush, as one would blush at the sight of a prominent statesman sliding down a fire-escape, or a duchess chasing her cook with a skillet. That flopsome *abandon* might go on all night in the lonely meadow among the mists, and if it went on all night—this was pure inspiration—I might be able to worry through the fishing-line with my teeth.

Those who desire an entirely new sensation should chew with all the teeth, and against time, through a best waterproofed silk line, one end of which belongs to a mad cow dancing fairy rings in the moonlight; at the same time keeping one eye on the cow and the other on the top joint of a split-cane rod. She buck-jumped and I bit on the slack just in front of the reel; I am in a position to state that that line was cored with steel wire throughout the particular section which I attacked. This has been formally denied by the tackle-maker, who is not to be believed.

The *whEEP* of the broken line running through the rings told me that henceforth the cow and I might be strangers. I had already bidden good-bye to some tooth or teeth; but no price is too great for freedom of the soul.

‘Madam,’ I said, ‘the minnow and twenty feet of very superior line are your alimony without reservation. For the wrong I have unwittingly done to you I express my sincere regret. At the same time, may I hope that Nature, the kindest of nurses, will in due season. . . .’

She or one of her companions must have stepped on her spare end of the line in the dark, for she bellowed

wildly and ran away, followed by all the cows. I hoped the minnow was disengaged at last; and before I went away looked at my watch, fearing to find it nearly midnight. My last cast for the jack was made at 6.23 P.M. There lacked still three and a half minutes of the half-hour; and I would have sworn that the moon was paling before the dawn!

‘Simminly someone were chasing they cows down to bottom o’ Ten Acre,’ said the farmer that evening. ‘Twasn’t you, sir?’

‘Now under what earthly circumstances do you suppose I should chase your cows? I wasn’t fishing for them, was I?’

Then all the farmer’s family gave themselves up to jam-smeared laughter for the rest of the evening, because that was a rare and precious jest, and it was repeated for months, and the fame of it spread from that farm to another, and yet another at least three miles away, and it will be used again for the benefit of visitors when the freshets come down in the spring.

But to the greater establishment of my honour and glory I submit in print this bald statement of fact, that I may not, through forgetfulness, be tempted later to tell how I hooked a bull on a Marlow Buzz, how he ran up a tree and took to water, and how I played him along the London Road for thirty miles, and gaffed him at Smithfield. Errors of this kind may creep in with the lapse of years, and it is my ambition ever to be a worthy member of that fraternity who pride themselves on never deviating by one hair’s-breadth from the absolute and literal truth.



# THE LAST RELIEF

1891



## THE LAST RELIEF

He rode to death across the moor—  
Oh, false to me and mine!  
But the naked ghost came to my door  
And bade me tend the kine.

The naked ghost came to my door  
And flickered to and fro,  
And syne it whimpered through the crack  
Wi' 'Jeanie, let me go!'

*Old Ballad.*

NOTHING IS EASIER than the administration of an Empire, so long as there is a supply of administrators. Nothing, on the other hand, is more difficult than short-handed administration. In India, where every man holding authority above a certain grade must be specially imported from England, this difficulty crops up at unexpected seasons. Then the great Empire staggers along, like a North Sea fishing-smack, with a crew of two men and a boy, until a fresh supply of food-for-fever arrives from England, and the gaps are filled up.

Some of the Provinces are permanently short-handed because their rulers know that if they give a man just a little more work than he can do, he continues to do it. From the man's point of view this is wasteful, but it helps the Empire forward; and flesh and blood are very cheap. The young men—and young men are always exacting—expect too much at



the outset. They come to India, desiring careers, and money, and a little success, and sometimes a wife. There is no limit to their desires, but in a few years it is explained to them by the sky above, the earth beneath, and the men around, that they are of far less importance than their work, and that it really does not concern themselves whether they live or die, so long as that work continues. After they have learned this lesson they become men worth consideration.

Many seasons ago the Gods attacked the administration of the Government of India in the heart of the hot season. They caused pestilences and famines, and killed the men who were deputed to deal with each pestilence and every famine. They rolled smallpox across a desert, and it killed four Englishmen one after the other, leaving thirty thousand square miles masterless for many days. They even caused cholera to attack the reserve depôts—the Sanitaria in the Himalayas—where men were waiting on leave till their turn should come to go down into the heat. They killed men with sun-stroke who otherwise might have lived for three months longer; and—this was mean—they caused a strong man to tumble from his horse and break his neck just when he was most needed. It will be long—that is to say, five or six years will pass—before those who survived forget that season of tribulation, when they danced at Simla with wives who feared that they might be widows before the morning, and when the daily papers from the Plains confined themselves entirely to the one kind of domestic occurrence.

Only the Supreme Government never blenched. It sat upon the hill-tops of Simla, among the pines, and

called for returns and statements as usual. Sometimes it called to a dead man, but it always received the returns as soon as his successor could take his place.

Ricketts of Myndonie died and was relieved by Carter. Carter was invalided home, but he worked to the last moment and left no arrears. He was relieved by Morten-Holt, who was too young for the work. Holt died of sunstroke when the famine was in Myndonie. He was relieved by Damer, a man borrowed from another Province, who did all he could, but broke down from overwork. Cromer, in London on a year's leave, was dragged out by telegram from the coolness of a Brompton flat to the white heat of Myndonie, and he held fast. That is the record of Myndonie alone.

On the Meonee Canal three men went down; in the Kahan District, where cholera was at its worst, three more. In the Divisional Court of Halimpur two good men were accounted for: and so the record ran, exclusive of the wives and little children. It was a great game of General Post with death in all the corners, and it drove the Government to their wits' end to tide over the trouble till autumn should bring the new drafts.

The Gods had no mercy, but the Government and the men it employed had no fear. This annoyed the Gods, who are immortal, for they perceived that the men whose portion was death were greater than they. The Gods are always troubled, even in their paradises, by this sense of inferiority. They know that it is so easy for themselves to be strong and cruel, and they are afraid of being laughed at. So they smote more

furiously than ever, just as a swordsman slashes at a chain to prove the temper of his blade.

The chain of men parted for an instant at the stroke, but it joined up again and continued to drag the Empire forward, and not one living link of it rang false, or was weak. All desired life, and love, and light, and liquor, and larks, but none the less they died without whimpering. Therefore the Gods would have continued to slay them till this very day, had not one man failed.

His name was Haydon, and, being young, he looked for all that young men desire; most of all he looked for love. He had been at work in the Girdhauri District for eleven months, till fever and pressure had shaken his nerve more than he knew. At last he had taken the holiday that was his right—the holiday for which he had saved up one month a year for three years past. Keyte, a junior, relieved him one hot afternoon. Haydon shut his ink-stained office-box, packed himself some thick clothes—he had been living in cotton ducks for four months—gave his files of sweat-dotted papers, saw Keyte slide a piece of blotting-paper between the naked arm and the desk, and left that parched station of roaring dust-storms for Simla and the cool of the snows.

There he found rest, and the pink blotches of prickly heat faded from his body, and being idle he went a-courting without knowing it. After a decent interval, he found himself drifting very gently along the road that leads to the church, and a pretty girl helped him. He enjoyed his meals, was free from the intolerable strain of bodily discomfort, and, as he looked from Simla upon the torment of the silver-wrapped

Plains below, laughed to think he had escaped honourably, and could talk prettily to a pretty girl, who, he felt sure, would in a little time answer an important question as it should be answered.

But, out of natural perversity and an inferior physique, Keyte, at Girdhauri, one evening laid his head upon his table and never lifted it up again, and news was flashed up to Simla that the District of Girdhauri called for a new head. It never occurred to Haydon that he would be in any way concerned till Hamerton, a Secretary of Government, stopped him on the Mall, and said: 'I'm afraid— I'm very much afraid—that you will have to drop your leave and go back to Girdhauri. You see, Keyte's dead, and—and we have no one else to send except yourself. The roster's a very short one this season; and you look much better than when you came up. Of course, I'll do all I can to spare you, but I'm afraid—I'm very much afraid—that you will have to go down.' The Government, on the other hand, was not in the least afraid. It was quite certain that Haydon must go down. He was in moderately good health, and the needs of the State were urgent. Let him, they said, return to his work at Girdhauri. He must forgo his leave, but some time in the years to come the Government might repay him the lost months if it were not too short-handed. In the meantime he would return to duty.

The assistants in the *Hara-Kiri* of Japan are all intimate friends of the man who must die. They like him immensely, and they bring him the news of his doom with polite sorrow. But die he must; for that is required of him.

Hamerton would have spared Haydon, had it been possible, but indeed he was the healthiest man in the ranks, and he knew the District. 'You will go down to-morrow,' said Hamerton. 'The regular notification will appear in the *Gazette* later on. We can't stand on forms this year.' Haydon said nothing, because those who govern India obey the law. He looked (it was evening) at the line of the sun-flushed snows forty miles to the east, and at the palpitating heat-haze of the Plains fifty miles to the west; and his heart sank. He wished to stay in Simla, to continue his wooing, and he knew too well the torments that were in store for him in Girdhauri. His nerve was broken. The coolness, the dances, the dinners that were to come, the scent of the Simla pines and the wood-smoke, the canter of horses' feet on the crowded Mall, turned his heart to water. He could have wept passionately, like a little child, for his lost holiday and his lost love, and, like a little child baulked of its play, he became filled with cheap spite that can only hurt the owner. The men at the Club were sorry for him, but he did not want to be condoled with. He was angry and afraid. Though he recognised the necessity of the injustice that had been done to him, he conceived that it could be put right by yet another injustice, and then . . . and then somebody else would have to do his work, for he would be out of it for ever.

He reflected on this while he was hurrying down the hillside, after a last interview with the pretty girl, to whom he had said nothing that was not commonplace and inconclusive. This last failure made him the more angry with himself, and the spite and the rage in-

creased. The air grew warmer and warmer as the cart rattled down the mountain road, till at last the hot stillness of the Plains closed over his head like heated oil, and he gasped for breath among the dry date-palms at Kalka. Then came the long level ride into Uniballa, the stench of dust which breeds despair, the lime-washed walls of Uniballa Station, hot to the hand, though it was eleven at night, the greasy rancid meal served by the sweating servants, the badly trimmed lamps in the oven-like waiting-room, and the whining of innumerable mosquitoes. That night, he remembered, there would be a dance at Simla. He was a very weak man.

That night Hamerton sat at work till late in the old Simla Foreign Office, which was a rambling collection of matchboxes packed away in a dark by-path under the pines. One of the wandering storms that ran before the regular breaking of the monsoon had wrapped Simla in white mist. The rain was roaring on the shingled, tin-patched roof, and the thunder rolled to and fro among the hills, as a ship rolls in the sea-ways.

Hamerton called for a lamp and a fire to drive out the smell of mould and forest undergrowth that crept in from the woods. The clerks and secretaries had left the office two hours ago, and there remained only one native orderly, who set the lamp and went away. Hamerton returned to his papers, and the voice of the rain rose and fell. In the pauses he could catch the crunching of 'rickshaw wheels and the clatter of horses' feet going to the dance at the Viceroy's. These ceased at last and the rain with them. The thunder drew off

muttering towards the Plains, and all the dripping pine trees sighed with relief.

'Orderly!' said Hamerton. He fancied that he heard somebody moving about the rooms.

There was no answer, except a deep-drawn breath at the door. It might come from a panther prowling about the verandas in search of a pet dog, but panthers generally snuffed in a deeper key. This was a thick, gasping breath, as of one who had been running swiftly, or lay in deadly pain.

Hamerton listened again.

There certainly was somebody moving about the Foreign Office. He could hear boards creaking in far-off rooms, and uncertain steps on the rickety staircase. Since the clock marked close upon midnight, no one had a right to be in the office.

Hamerton had picked up the lamp, and was going to make a search when the steps and the heavy breathing came to the door again, and stayed.

'Who's there?' said Hamerton. 'Come in!'

Again the heavy breathing, and a thick short cough.

'Who relieves Haydon?' said a voice outside. 'Haydon! Haydon! Dying at Umballa. He can't go till he is relieved. Who relieves Haydon?'

Hamerton dashed to the door and opened it to find a stolid messenger from the Telegraph Office, breathing through his nose, after the manner of natives. The man held out a telegram. 'I could not find the room at first,' he said. 'Is there an answer?'

The telegram was from the Stationmaster at Umballa, and said: 'Englishman killed. Up-mail 42.'

## THE LAST RELIEF

Slipped from platform. Dying. Haydon. Civilian. Inform Government.'

'There is no answer,' said Hamerton, and the man went away, but the fluttering whisper at the door continued: 'Haydon! Haydon! Who relieves Haydon? He must *not* go till he is relieved. Haydon! Haydon! Dying at Umballa. For pity's sake be quick.'

Hamerton thought for a minute of the short roster of men available, and answered quietly: 'Flint of Dehrauri.' Then, and not till then, did the hair begin to rise on his head, and Hamerton, Secretary to Government, neglecting the lamp and the papers, went out very quickly from the Foreign Office into the cool, wet night. His ears were tinging with the sound of a dry death-rattle, and he was afraid to continue his work.

Now only the Gods knew by whose design and intention Haydon had slipped from the dimly lighted Umballa platform under the wheels of the mail that was to take him back to his District, but since they lifted the pestilence on his death, we may assume that they had proved their authority over the minds of men, and found one man in India who was afraid of present pain.

END OF VOL. I





UNCOLLECTED PROSE  
VOL. I  
IN THE SUSSEX EDITION OF  
THE COMPLETE WORKS OF RUDYARD KIPLING  
PRINTED IN EDINBURGH BY R. & R. CLARK LTD.  
ON HAND-MADE PAPER  
BOUND IN LONDON BY JAMES BURN & CO. LTD.  
AND PUBLISHED BY MACMILLAN & CO. LTD.  
IN 1938



